



**My Three Wives  
Are Beautiful**

**Vampires**



by: Victor Weismann

# My Three Wives Are Beautiful Vampires

Copyright

My Three Wives Are Beautiful Vampires.

Author : Victor\_Weismann

Copyright owned by China Literature

# Table of Contents

- [Chapter 01: Prologue](#)
- [Chapter 02: Awakening.](#)
- [Chapter 03: Violet Snow.](#)
- [Chapter 04: An incredibly beautiful woman.](#)
- [Chapter 05: The Inquisition.](#)
- [Chapter 06: The most 'normal' parents in the world.](#)
- [Chapter 07: Daughter-in-law.](#)
- [Chapter 08: Grudges from the past.](#)
- [Chapter 09: The only one who forgives is God, I don't.](#)
- [Chapter 10: A frog in a well.](#)
- [Chapter 11: Obsession... And The Perfect Maid.](#)
- [Chapter 12: A hard-working maid.](#)
- [Chapter 13: Ruby Scarlett.](#)
- [Chapter 14: Thomas and Jimmy.](#)
- [Chapter 15: Jimmy is a smart guy.](#)
- [Chapter 16: Ambush.](#)
- [Chapter 17: She is your wife.](#)
- [Chapter 18: Sasha Fulger.](#)
- [Chapter 19: Sasha Fulger 2.](#)
- [Chapter 20: Childhood friends.](#)
- [Chapter 21: Andrew, Edward, and Leona.](#)
- [Chapter 22: Yanderes... Means problems.](#)
- [Chapter 23: Violet and Sasha meet.](#)
- [Chapter 24: Two wives.](#)
- [Chapter 25: Professor Adam.](#)
- [Chapter 26: Why do you hide behind that mask?](#)
- [Chapter 27: Priorities](#)
- [Chapter 28: The woman who kills Oni.](#)
- [Chapter 29: The three wives meet.](#)
- [Chapter 30: Scathach Scarlett.](#)
- [Chapter 31: The Third Wife.](#)
- [Chapter 32: Son-In-Law](#)
- [Chapter 33: Son-In-Law 2](#)
- [Chapter 34: Victor has been kidnapped!](#)

Chapter 35: Vampire World.

Chapter 36: It's time to get strong! And... Chaos.

Chapter 37: like mother, like daughter.

Chapter 38: Pepper is an airhead girl.

Chapter 39: Anomaly.

Chapter 40: Violet arrived, and two wives meet their father-in-law.

Chapter 41: The greedy witch.

Chapter 42: Now you understand me.

Chapter 43: Darling!

Chapter 44: Together.

Chapter 45: Insanity? Wrong, I'm sane.

Chapter 46: A beautiful night.

## Chapter 01: Prologue

I open my eyes, seeing a familiar ceiling, and turn my face to look at my computer that was on my personal desk, "When did I get home?" rising from my bed I start to think. My memories were scrambled and I couldn't remember anything...

"Victor!!" Suddenly I hear a woman's voice. It was an angelic voice, a wonderfully beautiful voice; and she sounded very worried.

"Ugh... Who?" I put a hand to my head when I feel it start hurting badly.

I lean on the bed and try to get up, but all of a sudden I feel my hand sinking into the material of the bed. I hear the noise of wood breaking and look in the direction of my hand; I see that my hand has gone through the mattress and broke the wood that supports my bed...

I quickly pulled my hand away and I looked, confused, at my mattress that had a hole in it "What's wrong with me?" I asked aloud, stunned.

I don't remember being so strong; did something happen to me? I start to question myself, and I try to search my memory. But, even though I try to search my memory, I can't find it; it's like something is blocking my memories.

I try to form a coherent train of thought as if I'm putting together a puzzle, "Let's start at the beginning, I went to the grocery store to buy the food my mom ordered, but..."

I try to continue to form a timeline with my memories, but I don't have time for that when I feel unbearable thirst in my throat. It was like I ran a marathon and needed a drink of water! My throat was parched!

I quickly get up, ignoring the sounds of wood creaking from the

floor and grab my bathroom door handle, attempting to open the door, but something amazing happens...

The door is literally ripped off the wall. I was shocked at this show of force but I don't have time to admire it, or even question how I was able to do it. I quickly walk into the bathroom and try to turn on the water tap.

As before, the tap broke when I tried to open it and the water started to spew out; I ignored it, and put my mouth into the water trying to drink as much as possible. I looked like a man who was lost in the desert and found an oasis for the first time in days.

I feel the cold water from the tap entering my mouth and seeping down my throat, but the water doesn't seem to satisfy me; I needed more. I needed something to satisfy my thirst, the water didn't seem to be working.

"Calm down," I hear a woman's voice, it was the same voice that called my name when I woke up.

Suddenly, as if it were a misleading lie, the thirst I had been feeling earlier disappeared.

I fall to the ground and start to inhale and breathe heavily, "Who's there?" I asked out loud, but I didn't hear an answer. I take a deep breath and sigh, "Just what in the name of God is happening?"

I look at the overflowing water and realize I couldn't leave it like this. I carefully turned off another valve that was located near the floor and soon the water stopped pouring.

I sigh in relief and get up off the floor. I turn to look at myself in the mirror, and what I see surprises me: "Is that ... me?"

I look a little taller, I have a well defined body with muscles in the right places, six-pack abs and muscular arms. What stood out the most in my appearance is the incredibly pale skin, it's like I'm missing

most of the blood in my body. I used to look like a dead creature from a disease that gave me anemia, an extremely inconvenient disease and in some cases deadly... But, this is another level... I look like I don't have any blood in my body, I also noticed that my face is more defined; and my blue eyes and black hair have gained more shine?

Did the former 21-year-old who was skinny and looked like a teenager, grow up to be an athletic looking man in just one night? What happened? Was I kidnapped by the government and drafted into the super soldier program?

"Victor, what's going on? Why all the noise?" I look towards where I hear another voice and I start to breathe heavily; my throat starts to get thirsty again. I look through the wall and see the image of a human, and I can see her heart beating in a very attractive rhythm...

I could see the person's entire body with a red vision, it was like the world around me had changed; and I could see the heart that was glowing a more vibrant red. It was like it was inviting me to rip it out ... and drink it.

"Victor? What's happening? What was that noise?" Hearing my mother's voice, I woke up from my inebriated state.

"M-Mother...?" I responded in the most normal voice I could muster; but, it was obvious that I failed.

"Victor!? Open the door, what's going on?" I look at my reflection in the mirror and notice that my eyes have changed to blood red.

"Oh... Shit."

Realizing what happened to me changed me in many different ways, I started to think rationally. I try with all my strength to resist the temptation to leave the room and rip my mother's heart out.

First, I must calm my mother down and get her out of here.

"Mom, I'm busy right now."

Realizing I was speaking normally again, she visibly calms; at least that's what my new red vision implies. I can't see her expression but I can see her heart beating at a slower pace.

"Can you open the door?"

"I can't...I'm not wearing clothes right now", I said in an uncomfortable voice.

"Oh," She suddenly turns and starts heading towards the stairs. I was confused for a moment, why did she give up so easily?

"Make sure you take out your trash; I don't want to clean your fluids, that's your girlfriend's job. If you have one of course."

Oof, I feel an arrow in my chest for some reason but, strangely, it helped me calm down. I grow a little smile; my mother has no mercy and speaks her mind, she's very honest. That's the quality I like most about her. Though, I won't deny that I am often irritated with her honesty; but living 21 years of my life under her roof, you get used to it.

Anyway, I look at the clock and see that it's morning. I need to go to college, but I don't think I'm able to go out on the street right now, and...

I look at my room and see the mess I made, the floor was broken, the door was ripped out, the bathroom was flooded... "I need to organize this mess"

...

Two hours later.

When tidying my room, I found out several things about my new self. I had more strength, much more strength than I had previously.

Because of this change, I'm having trouble controlling myself. Before I used X force and I could open my bedroom door without breaking anything, but if I use the same force now, the bedroom door will literally be ripped off the wall.

My senses like hearing, smelling, sight, etc. They're much more sensitive, my hearing isn't on the level of the comic book scout friend who wears blue and red and has the S symbol on his chest; that guy could hear the entire planet...

As far as I've tested, I can hear everything that's going on in my house and in the surrounding neighborhood. It's annoying, I hear multiple voices at the same time and I can't discern who's who.

Because of that, I tried something. I focused all my attention on a porn video that I opened on my computer called 'The hardest game in the world'.

Do I look stupid? Yes, but it worked. Men are easy creatures to grab attention from.

My sense of smell has also improved, but the only thing I can smell from several kilometers away is blood, I can't differentiate the scents either.

Another thing I learned is that I have another kind of vision. When I switch to this vision, the world turns red and I can see everything around as if there were no walls. And, in this world, I can see human silhouettes. When I focus on these beings, I can see their hearts glowing bright red.

I just tested this for a few seconds; I don't want to risk getting thirsty again.

And yes... I know shit happened to me... I became a vampire, or something like a vampire...

The features are very obvious, pale skin, red eyes, better physical

conditioning, and an insatiable thirst...

Knowing this, I have a starting line in my reasoning.

First, let's see what weaknesses I have.

The most obvious weaknesses from vampire books are garlic, the cross of Jesus (or something related to god), sunlight, and I can't enter someone's house uninvited. Also ... running water?

Some weaknesses may seem stupid, but I need to test them all. First the cross of Jesus. I look at a necklace that is hanging on my computer screen, on that necklace there is a cross; I slowly touch the necklace and I feel ... nothing.

Hmm, next. Running water... Well, I drank tap water, I guess that counts as a no? I don't know. I need to go to a pool or river that has running water and test; let's leave this weakness for another time.

Next on the list is garlic, I remember I bought garlic pizza two days ago. I walk towards the small fridge in my room and pick up the garlic pizza I had bought. Smelling the pizza with my nose, I feel like throwing up, but I also don't feel anything else; like a sudden weakness or something.

I think the urge to vomit was because my appetite changed? I try to put the pizza in my mouth and as expected, my body instantly rejects the food.

I ran towards the bathroom and spit the pizza into the toilet.

"How disgusting," I said with a nauseous face, "Why do I feel like I've eaten an out-of-date fish?"

My stomach churns, and I feel like throwing up. I quickly started to inhale and take deep breaths, a few minutes later repeating this process, the urge to vomit passed.

In the future, I must test whether whole garlic has any effect on

me. Thinking about it now, that was stupid... What kind of vampire would have weakness to garlic pizza?

Anyway, the next weakness is the sun...

I walk towards my bedroom window, which is located on the wall where my bed is positioned; I climb onto my bed and open a small gap in the curtain for the sunlight to enter.

I swallow my saliva, I am a little scared of disappearing. After all, the biggest weakness of vampires is sunlight, but, I need to know; and I think just putting my finger in the sun shouldn't cause any problems, right?

Slowly, I bring my finger closer to the sunlight. When there was only 1CM left until sunlight touched my finger, I stopped... No, I need to know; don't be a chicken, Victor!

I put my finger in the sunlight and... nothing happens. I don't feel my finger disappear, and I don't feel that intense pain that I expected...

I sigh in relief, I look at my window curtain and open it. As soon as the sunlight enters my room, I feel the sun bathing me in warmth and touching my entire body; yet, I feel nothing.

For some reason, I felt like I should praise the sun right now, but I'm not going to do that. What if someone saw me?

I lie down on the bed and look up at the ceiling. "With no other obvious vampire weaknesses, I don't want to try to decapitate myself or rip my heart out; I'm not crazy enough for that."

"... What am I?" I say to myself out loud. This morning was weird. For some reason, I don't remember what happened yesterday and I woke up with the characteristics of a vampire. But, I also didn't have the obvious weaknesses of a vampire... Am I reading too many books?

"But, Hey, at least I don't glow in the sunlight." I laugh at my own lame joke. I close my eyes, and slowly, I drift off to sleep.

## Chapter 02: Awakening.

Chapter 02: Awakening.

Night...

I open my eyes and get up from my bed. I hold my throat, feeling an unbearable thirst. This time I felt like I couldn't control myself; I feared for my family's life, that I would do something myself, an action I would regret forever.

I open the window, position myself at the edge, and jump.

I don't know how much force I put in, but I felt the window frame crack a little, and soon I was in heaven...

At night, I felt stronger, my senses increased. Before, I could hear my whole neighborhood, but now I don't know what the limit is. I also had no control over my feelings. I actually tried to control myself, but the bloodlust was holding me back; it was like I tried to drive a car, but I was too drunk to achieve any control.

I was freaking out from the smell of blood; I need blood... I need blood!! Without me realizing it, sharp fangs started to grow in my mouth.

I fell on top of a building, and felt the crash of concrete breaking, but I ignored it and ran towards the stronger smell of blood.

I don't know how long it took, my consciousness was almost fading, but I did my best to keep my consciousness active. I refuse to become an animal overpowered by thirst! Soon, I was in a dark alley. Slowly, my world starts to change to the color of blood, and soon I see four silhouettes.

Three men, and one woman, two men are holding the woman's

arms, and another man is holding a knife to the woman's neck. I looked at the hearts of the three men as if watching prey; they looked just like my mother's, with the only difference being that the light of their hearts was weaker.

"Hey, who are you? Get out of here!" They said something, but I didn't care.

I looked at the woman, and realized she was weird. She didn't have a red light in her heart. Did she have a red light in her neck? For some reason, women attracted me more than men.

One of the men walks towards me with a knife in his hand, he approaches me but stops walking when I look at him. Without my noticing, a predatory smile appeared on my face, and in that smile, they could see that my teeth looked sharper than a normal human. My teeth looked like a shark's, teeth that could easily tear through flesh and bones, and that sight startled the three bandits.

The bad guys' faces started to change, they looked like they saw their worst nightmare manifested in front of them.

"M-Monster" The thug who was holding the woman spoke, he tried to run away, but he couldn't; he was paralyzed.

My smile grows abnormally when I feel the fear of the bad guys. I walked calmly towards them, they couldn't get away. By the time they looked into my eyes, they were already trapped like pigs being brought to the slaughter.

With a display of supernatural speed, I appear in front of the bad guy with the knife. With a speed that he can't react to, I pierced his chest with my hand and pulled out his heart.

Holding the man's heart in my hand, I felt the heart beating in an attractive rhythm; but for some reason, the man's blood didn't interest me. I opened my hands and the man's heart dropped to the ground.

"H-Huh...?" The movement I made was so fast that the bandit's own body didn't have time to react to what happened. All the bandit saw at the end of his life was the predatory smile and red eyes of the freak that attacked him.

"Hiii~!!" The thug who was holding the woman screamed like a scared little girl and tried to get away, but like his friend, he couldn't run.

This time, I disappear in front of the thug and appear behind him and soon his vision starts to spin, it was as if he had lost his balance, but before the thread of life faded from his eyes, he realized that his head had separated from his body.

I grab his head and use my tongue to lick the blood off his face. After all, I was curious about the taste, though I didn't feel like drinking his blood, but soon my expression distorted in disgust. "disgusting."

I spit on the floor in disgust, it feels like I've eaten a bad hamburger. Now, I understood why I wasn't interested in these men's blood.

I look at the last bandit left, using my arm like a sword, I cut the bandit in half. The bandit looks down and sees his body falling towards the ground. In the end he can't even say anything.

I was intoxicated by the pleasure of killing and the smell of blood in the air, my consciousness was in a state in between wakefulness and sleep, from my perspective it felt like I was dreaming.

"Hahahahaha" I hear a woman's voice laughing, I look at her.

My vision slowly returns to normal, and I see a beautiful pale woman with long white hair that is tied in a ponytail that reaches the floor. She has vibrant violet eyes, a nice figure, modest breasts, and an ass big enough that it can't be hidden by the black dress she's wearing. Was she wearing a dress with a tie? Her outfit looked like goth cosplay.

She's also tall, just a little under my height. I don't know how tall I am now, but before my transformation I was 175CM, I look around 180CM now.

"As predicted, you exceeded my expectations, Victor." Hearing her voice again, I suddenly remembered the voice from when I woke up this morning.

"You-" When I was going to question her about the doubts I had, she put her finger to my lips: "Shhh."

"You must quench your thirst first, my blood will tell you everything you need to know, Darling." Suddenly, she reached for the buttons of the dress she was wearing and started to undress, slowly she showed some of her neck.

Seeing that pale skin and smelling her a lot stronger than before.

I swallow hard... My senses were going crazy, all I wanted was to sink my fangs into her neck.

While keeping the flirtatious smile on her face she said: "Come."

I hug her with all my strength and bite her neck. "Ahhh~! You are being very violent."

I ignored what she said and started drinking her blood, it was the most delicious thing I've ever tasted in this life. I felt like I was eating a 5-star dish made by the most renowned chef in the world; but it wasn't just that, I felt a connection forming, I felt her whole existence, it was a euphoric feeling, it was like a drug you couldn't stop taking. Her blood tasted so good.

"Looks like you like my blood, that's good." She spoke with a flirtatious smile, I suddenly felt a bite on my neck.

Everything I was feeling from drinking her blood suddenly intensified. The blood tasted 100x better, our connection increased

and we became one? It was weird, but it wasn't bad. Actually... It was really good!

Suddenly a set of memories started to enter my mind. I was in a place that I know well, this was the market I always go to when my mom needs to buy supplies. Apparently, I was seeing this woman's point of view.

"Are you sure?" A woman's voice asked, she sounded quite unsure.

"Yes, I will make him my 'Darling'." The white-haired woman spoke with a loving smile.

Suddenly the vision changed and I was in an abandoned building? Looks like the woman took me to some abandoned place.

She bites her finger with her fang, and soon the blood starts to drip, when the blood falls to the ground something like a magic circle forms. When she looks at the ground, I see my old body lying there, and, did I look hurt? My arm had a big cut like a wild animal had clawed me. I could tell that I would have died from blood loss at any moment.

When the circle formed on the ground, she bit her wrist. As soon as red blood started coming out of her arm, she brought her arm closer to my body, and let her blood fall into my mouth.

She sits on my body, lifts me off the ground, hugs me, then she says: "Victor, you're going to be reborn; I'm sorry about this." Suddenly, she breaks my neck!?

It stays connected to my body, and soon something happens. My body starts to regenerate at an unbelievable speed and the magic circle starts to spin on the ground. When my body stops regenerating, the magic circle suddenly disappears.

The woman displays a satisfied smile, "Success."

Suddenly, I open my eyes, and I realize that they are blood red. I get up quickly and hug the woman, then I bite the white-haired woman's neck.

"Ahhh~~!"

I finish biting the white-haired woman and the memories of the other person disappear, or she just stops sharing?

Before I can figure out what happened next, the world around me starts to crumble and I wake up in the dark alley I was in earlier.

What happened after I disappeared?

"Victor, do you want to kill me? You are already satisfied, right?" She spoke with a playful smile.

I stop biting the white-haired woman and look at her, I have a lot of questions on my mind now, but first: "What's your name?"

The woman displays the most beautiful smile I have ever seen, "Violet... Violet Snow"

"The violet ice flower? Fancy name, huh", I commented with a small forced smile.

"My family is quite peculiar." She laughed.

"I bet it is" I commented with the same smile, so I give my name too:

"Victor...Victor Walker"

"The walking victor? That is very simple," she commented with a small laugh.

"Well, my family are simple people" I commented with a shrug.

Now that I've calmed down, I look at the corpses and feel my

stomach churn at the sight. I feel like throwing up, but at the same time my body refuses to let anything out, after all... I was just nauseous. It was like I had taken a long 24-hour car ride, and I needed some air.

I had mixed feelings about the situation, internally. I didn't care about the death of strangers, even though those deaths were caused by myself, but my rational mind knew that was wrong. But, honestly, I was just confused by everything that was going on, and I didn't care about those dead men.

Violet, seeing my confused face, proposes: "Let's change locations."

I nod in agreement, she approaches me, and says: "Try to follow me, I'll slow down."

Violet suddenly, with a small impulse, jumps towards the building's roof. I try to do the same, but the ground around me ends up breaking. Looking at this, I realize how I have no control of my strength; leaving it aside for now, I start following Violet.

I know she was the woman who made me what I am now; I should be suspicious of her, but for some reason, I can't do it. It's just a feeling, but I feel like I've met this woman once in the past, I just don't remember when.

Well, baby steps...one baby step at a time, I know absolutely nothing right now to make a decision. For now, let's follow this beautiful vampire.

...

Info:

The sociopath is a term used to describe someone who has an antisocial personality disorder. People with this disorder, also called sociopathy, lack empathy. They cannot understand the feelings of

others

The functional Sociopath designates a person who, despite suffering from sociopathy, has this situation under control, ie, the effects of sociopathy do not greatly affect their interaction with other people.

## Chapter 03: Violet Snow.

I accompanied Violet to a mansion similar to those you would only see in movies, the place was absurdly huge; how many rooms does this place have? Just from the size of the garden and the statue of a woman in the middle of the garden, I realize this place must have cost a lot of money.

The moment I tried to enter Violet's house, I was prevented from entering? Soon I remember the weakness of vampires who can't enter other people's houses without being invited... It seems I have that weakness too.

Violet looks at me for a moment just as a woman who was dressed as a French maid appears, the moment the woman enters my vision, I realize she's not a vampire.

She has blond hair tied back in a ponytail, blue eyes and a modest body, she looked to be between 21 and 30 years old. Her height was a little short, I think she was 170 CM?

"Miss Violet, I see you have brought a guest." The maid spoke in a neutral tone that held no feeling.

"Natalia, can you invite him in?" Violet spoke in a friendly tone.

"Yes, Miss Violet." She said while looking at Violet.

"You can enter." When the maid spoke these words, I felt as if a force that was preventing me from entering had disappeared.

"Come on, Victor. You must have a lot of questions, right?" Violet spoke with a gentle little smile.

I nod in agreement, I walk towards Violet and start to follow her. While I was walking towards Violet, I felt the maid look at me like she

was sizing me up or something.

Passing the maid, Violet and I walk towards a living room, she points to a plush-looking sofa and asks me to sit down.

I nod my head in agreement; as I take a seat on the couch, I see Violet walking up beside me and sitting down next to me.

Hmm, her scent... Her scent is very alluring... I shake my head several times in an attempt to control my impulses.

"Heh, you are controlling yourself very well despite being a newborn." She commented with a small surprised smile. "I was thinking you would jump on me and ravage me on this couch for all the servants in this mansion to see... too bad"

This woman... I feel my eyes twitch a little when I hear what she says.

"Although I find that offer attractive, I'm not an exhibitionist, and I want answers"

"You're honest, huh?" She blinked a few times as she responded with a pretty smile.

"Try to live with a woman who only speaks her mind for 21 years of your life, you will inevitably pick up on some of her traits." I spoke with a shrug, for some reason I felt the temperature around Violet start to warm up?

"Heh, I wonder who this woman is" She spoke as her eyes were hidden by her hair.

"She is my mother, of course"

Suddenly the temperature around her started to return to normal, and Violet looked up smiling. "Oh, she's your mother; of course, she's your mother, I forgot you had a mother." She nodded her head several times as if she understood something very important. "And you're also

a virgin so, of course, you don't have a girlfriend!"

"How do you know I...?" I looked at her in disbelief, how does she know I didn't have girlfriends?

"Oh, only humans who are virgins can be turned into vampires, that's why I know you're a virgin."

That's not what I wanted to know, but whatever.

"..."

This is new to me, I thought vampires could turn any human into a vampire, but there is this restriction. Huh?

Realizing I was silent thinking about something, Violet starts talking. "Before I start explaining, you know what we are, right?"

I honestly answer: "A vampire... Or something like a vampire"

"Oh? Why do you think that?"

I organize my thoughts and respond, "First of all, I don't have the weaknesses of movie vampires like for example; garlic, sunlight, running water, the cross of Jesus, etc."

For some reason, Violet opens her eyes wide when she hears what I said.

"And I've never seen a vampire with the ability to see the 'red world.'" Of course I was talking about the movies I've watched, but Violet seems to ignore that.

"Red world?" Violet asked.

I elaborate, "For some reason, when I'm excited by the smell of blood, the way I see the world changes and turns red. In this world, the walls seem to cease to exist, and I just see a plain with various silhouettes of the humans. And, when I look at the hearts of humans, I

can see their red hearts beating like they are inviting me to drink that person's blood. For lack of better names, I call that world the red world."

I guess I should call it vampire vision in the future? But that's not right, after all it seems to be my power alone... Hmm, I'll think about that later.

I look at Violet, precisely speaking, I look at Violet's neck, "But you're the only one who is different, when I look at you with that vision, I can only see your neck glowing red."

Violet looks at me like she's looking at a rare animal. "As I thought! It seems like it was the right decision to turn you into a vampire; you are more special than I thought! And, you also inherited my characteristics." she said, excitedly, as she hugged me.

"Woman, explain to me what's going on!" I said as I pulled her face away from my neck, this woman is thirsty for blood!

Cough!

Violet pretended to cough and leaned away from me, she assumed a noble woman's posture and started talking; this posture would be more convincing if she wasn't in my lap, but I'm not complaining: "Let's start at the beginning, there are two kinds of vampires in this world, the noble vampires I'm a part of, and the plebeian vampires that you'll one day meet."

"The two species are the same, but at the same time different. For example: noble vampires can have children and, without exception, the noble vampire's child will have the same characteristics as his noble father or mother, with the only difference being that the characteristics of the child will be much stronger."

"The Snow family has the fire trait, we can control fire and we have full immunity to the sun. Normally this trait wouldn't be passed on to other vampires my family has raised, but you seem to be different."

she said in a happy tone.

I opened my eyes a little... "That means I inherited..."

"Yes, you inherited my trait, all vampires without exception have a weakness to the sun. Only a few families have a certain resistance to sunlight, but only my family has full immunity to sunlight."

I swallow hard for a moment when I think of the bullshit I've done: "Just out of curiosity what happens when a normal vampire is bathed in sunlight?"

Violet smiled gently. "They turn to ashes."

Jesus Christ... That was close, really. I almost turned to volcanic ash... But 'Snow', huh? The characteristic of her family is the opposite of the meaning of her name.

"Just like I said before, my family's characteristic is to control fire." She raises her hand and a fireball appears in her hand.

"My family is very feared in the vampire world. After all, with a small ball of fire, we can burn a vampire to ash." She spoke with a predatory smile full of shark-like teeth.

"What's the difference with 'plebeian' vampires?" I asked.

"They can't have children, and they get characteristics according to their personality. The plebeian vampires are usually the vampires that the noble vampires have created."

"...So, I'm a plebeian vampire?" I asked, confused. After all, I wasn't born a vampire.

"Yes, and no." Violet spoke.

"You were born a plebeian vampire, but since you inherited my trait, that makes you a noble vampire."

"Remember that red world you talked about?" She spoke in a sensual tone as she breathed close to my ear.

"Yes" I reply in a flat voice trying to ignore her teasing.

"That's your plebeian vampire trait, you gained that trait when I turned you into a vampire. Do you remember your immunity to sunlight?" She asked as she licked my ear.

When Violet licked my ear, it felt like a surge of electricity went through my entire body. Feeling Violet's panties rubbing against my little brother, I can't help but get excited.

"...Yes" I replied a little breathlessly, I didn't even realize I had held my breath.

"You inherited this trait from me, normally that's not possible, but you're special; your blood is special." She licked my neck.

"Just because you have full immunity to sunlight, that makes you a noble vampire of House Snow."

Am I special? Is my blood special? What the hell is this woman talking about?

Despite being aroused and my urges freaking out telling me to bite Violet, I could still think somewhat clearly.

"Let's save the boring explanation for later" Violet pulls away from me, I look at her face and see that it was a little red and she was breathing heavily. She was clearly turned on and felt bloodlust, she put her hand on my shirt and rips.

She opens her mouth and I can see her teeth transforming, they got sharper, just like mine. Her teeth seemed capable of tearing flesh easily, she bites me with those teeth that look like those of a shark.

I only feel the pain for a moment, but soon a wave of pleasure spreads through my body and I grab Violet's ass. I get up from the

couch holding us and throw her back onto the couch, while doing all these moves, she hasn't stopped sucking my blood.

I rip off her goth dress and soon an elegant black bra appears, I open my mouth and I feel my teeth change and my vision shift to blood red. As I look around the mansion with my eyes, I see all the people hiding behind the mansion wall. It made me lose the urge to bite Violet, and a wave of annoyance began to spread through my body.

Doing the math, I see 4 female silhouettes and 2 male silhouettes, only one silhouette had their heart glowing red. I assume this is the maid I saw when I entered the mansion, the rest must be vampires.

For some inexplicable reason, I was annoyed, I was extremely annoyed. I know I'm not an exhibitionist, but these emotions don't make sense to me, it's like a little problem is going up 500x because of my emotions.

I look at a silhouette that has a red glowing mark on its neck, I see that person's silhouette shiver for a moment.

A bloody atmosphere began to leave my body, and I spoke with an irritated growl, "Leave!"

I've seen the silhouette shake several times, but the male silhouette clenches his fists tightly and remains in place.

Is it that annoying because he didn't leave? Annoying, irritating...

Noticing the irregularity in my emotions, Violet stops biting me and looks up to where I was looking with glowing red eyes. "Leave."

As soon as she orders, the people behind the walls disappear.

"Ignore them, they're just protecting me; my family is overprotective, you know?" She giggled a little with her lips full of

blood, she pushed me down on the couch again, and showed her neck, "Eat"

The feeling of annoyance begins to subside, and soon my impulses start to trigger again, and soon I bite Violet's neck.

## Chapter 04: An incredibly beautiful woman.

"I don't understand," I said out loud with my head in Violet's lap. After our blood-sucking session, I lay in Violet's lap while she stroked my hair.

"What do you not understand?" She spoke in a maternal tone.

"My emotions..." I said, then continued: "I've always been a calm, rational person... My mom always taught me to use my head in any kind of situation, but I don't understand why I'm losing control of my emotions; it's a very strange feeling"

Violet, who was still wearing a black bra, looks at me and flashes a small maternal smile: "You're doing better than most newborns, don't worry, this is normal"

"This is normal?" I questioned confusedly. In the vampire movies I watched with my dad, vampires always seemed to be in control of their actions. I guess I shouldn't take knowledge of movies to reality, huh? Well, I can't help but list them considering I watched a lot of movies with my dad; he was a hardcore movie fan.

"Yes, vampires feel things more intensely than a normal human, it's because of this problem that we live in isolation with other vampires. Just imagine, you're walking down the street calmly, and you accidentally bump into a vampire? If that vampire is a newborn, he will be extremely upset and will want to kill you."

"...that is ridiculous..." I can't help but comment.

"Indeed, but it's not just that: love, hate, fun, etc. All of our emotions are amplified; there are a lot of vampires who are crazy because of that."

... Vampires seem to be a problematic race.

Come to think of it, I accepted this situation too easily, huh? Well, it's no use crying over spilled milk. At least now, I won't suffer from constant anemia because of my blood type.

Suddenly, I hear footsteps approaching; I look in the direction of the steps and see the blonde maid again.

"Miss Violet..." The blonde maid looks at me and Violet for a few seconds, she looks at Violet again: "Miss Violet, please dress appropriately, we have a visitor"

Violet looks at the maid with an annoyed look, I realize she wasn't upset with the maid, she was upset with the guest.

I get up from Violet's lap and my eyes turn red, as I look toward the mansion's entrance I see the silhouettes of a man and a woman, and both their necks are glowing red.

"Vampires, huh?" I commented in a neutral tone.

Violet looks at me with her eyes shining, "That skill of yours is quite useful, how far can you see?" She looked like a child who found something very interesting, her eyes sparkled with curiosity.

"I don't know, I've never tested the limits of my abilities yet" I spoke honestly.

Violet nods, a little disappointed, and gets up from the couch. The maid approaches a wall and gently pushes a part of it, soon a wardrobe of black clothes appears. But, for some reason, there are men's clothes too, and the men's clothes are also black...

"Choose any outfit and get dressed, Victor. I had prepared the clothes for you beforehand, ahh~! I've wanted to say those words for a long time." She speaks with an excited smile.

Choose any outfit? But it's all the same...

I look at Violet with a neutral face, when she gets close to the

wardrobe, I can't help but think; A long time, huh? Just how long have you been watching me, Violet?

Suddenly a woman who is wearing a modern maid's outfit appears at my side: "Lord Victor, please dress appropriately for the visitors; they may be lesser beings, or maybe insects, they may even be pigs who came here to be downcast, but you, as a noble vampire, must always dress appropriately." The maid spoke in a neutral tone that held no emotions, but I could feel her contempt for her guest.

I look at the maid, she has short black hair, black eyes, and her expression is always set with a poker face. Looking at the maid's features, she looks oriental and she's very short, she must be around 160 CM?

"What's your name? And Lord Victor? Why are you calling me that?" I ask confused.

"This maid's name is Kaguya; and you are Lady Violet's husband so, of course, we, as servants, should call you with respect." she spoke as if it were obvious.

Hearing what the maid said, I open my eyes wide and quickly turn to Violet who is being dressed by the blonde maid. Seeing my questioning eyes, Violet displays the most beautiful loving smile I have ever seen, and says:

"Unlike the movies you've watched in the past, vampires have several restrictions on turning other beings into vampires. The first restriction you already know, the human must be a virgin, the second restriction was created by our ancestors, when creating a new vampire a ritual must be done. When the ritual takes place a magic circle appears on the ground, at this moment the vampire responsible for the ritual must choose whether the human they will transform will become the husband or slave of this vampire." She pauses, slowly her eyes begin to change to blood red, then continues:

"When I turned you into a vampire, I chose you to be my

'husband'."

So it was that magic circle I saw in the memories, huh? Unconsciously, my eyes start to change to red as I look at Violet and I can feel something I can't explain, it is like I'm being filled with another life? It's a really weird feeling, but it's really good. It's the same feeling I get when I feed on Violet's blood, but at the same time different; I can also feel emotions that aren't mine?

I feel happiness, love, and obsession coming from Violet; these emotions are so intense that I feel overwhelmed for a moment.

"Can you feel it?" She spoke in a loving voice as she touched the area where her heart was, she was breathing erratically and I could see that the air around her was starting to heat up.

"...Yes" I said honestly, I try to focus on that feeling and I can feel Violet, I can feel all the emotions she is transmitting to me, but... unconsciously, I turn my head and look in a different direction than Violet and I can feel something incredibly faint? It was like I felt a connection somewhere else, an extremely weak connection, but I couldn't pinpoint the location of this connection I was feeling.

"This is proof of our connection... From the moment I turned you into a vampire, you became my husband for all eternity, you became my 'Darling'." I turn to look at Violet.

When she spoke those words, she had a crazy smile on her face; it was a dangerous smile. But, at the same time, I thought that smile was beautiful, a very beautiful smile indeed.

She definitely had a head problem, and I think that just for the simple fact that I'm taking this very easily, I must have a head problem too? But honestly? I do not mind.

I display a small happy smile: "It looks like I'll see you for years to come, so I hope you take care of me... Honey?" The last word almost didn't come out of my mouth, after all, I didn't know if it was right; I

didn't know what it was to have a girlfriend, much less did I know what it was to have a wife, but I felt it was appropriate to call her that way.

Suddenly Violet's smile grows erratically, she suddenly appears in front of me and hugs me tightly.

"Yes! I will take care of you! My Darling!"

It seems I triggered some kind of button in this woman's body, she started hugging me and sniffing me while saying 'Darling', she dragged her hand all over my body like she was trying to possess me or something.

She looked incredibly adorable, unconsciously I started stroking her white hair.

Feeling my hand in her hair, she suddenly froze and stopped moving.

She turned her face towards me, as we were almost the same height I could see her face very close to mine. As I caressed her, I asked, "What happened, why did you stop?"

"Hmm, aren't you annoyed, or irritated by my attitude?" She asked in an untrusting voice.

"Why would I be? I think you are incredibly adorable" I replied honestly.

"Ugh" She put her hand to her chest, it was like she had been hit by something in her heart.

"Yes, indeed. Lady Violet is definitely at a point of no return." Kaguya spoke as the blonde-haired maid approached Natalia.

"Shh" Natalia made a silent gesture to Kaguya.

Kaguya just nods.

I look at myself and realize I was wearing a black suit? I looked, shocked, at my appearance and at Kaguya's hands holding my old clothes, wait! That's my underwear!? How could I not feel her undressing me?

Kaguya made some hand gestures: "I am a professional employee of Clan Snow, I would be surprised if Lord Victor could feel me undressing him. These hands have been trained to undress any man or woman no matter what gender; I must comply with my duty properly, as a professional maid I take my duty very seriously."

She spoke in a flat, unemotional tone, but I could feel an unshakable confidence in that maid's tone.

"...Okay..." I didn't know what to say. Actually, what am I supposed to say? I just thought that and turned to Violet, who was still in a state like she was dreaming, she was giggling in low tones as she spoke quickly, she seemed to be delirious.

"She's definitely in a state of no return, I think I should notify Lady Violet's parents." Natalia said as she walked towards the door.

Well, isn't that interesting? A very dedicated maid, a blonde maid who doesn't seem to care about her master, and a quirky master. I think vampires are weird beings, huh? Although the blonde maid is not a vampire.

...

It took a while for Violet to wake up from her state of illusion...or I don't think she's fully awake yet.

We were in a different room, I was sitting on the couch and Violet was sitting next to me as she hugged my arms with a little smile on her face. She looked like a very respected noblewoman, (It seems like her attitude I saw a few minutes ago was all an illusion).

I look around and can't help but wonder how many rooms does

this mansion have? This room looks incredibly similar to the one I was in, but I feel this room is different. For some reason I feel uneasy in this place, it's like I'm being watched. I use my vision that changes my world to blood red, and I could see why I felt that way.

This room was surrounded by vampires, hmm, I did a brief count and there were twenty vampires? And they were all over the mansion; it looks like this place is bigger than I thought. I look down and see some red silhouettes in the basement too. I also see that the only human in this mansion is Natalia, and she was actually in the basement sitting with two more vampires, and she seems to be eating something?

"Lady Violet, I didn't know you were... Hmm, dating-" The vampire who was sitting across from me started to speak, but he was interrupted by Violet

"He is my husband" She spoke in a neutral tone that carried a lot of happiness.

"...I didn't know you were married" The man spoke.

I look at the man who is accompanied by a woman, he is a tall man of 190CM, with short black hair slicked back. He was wearing a white suit, and glasses. Overall he looked like a successful lawyer.

The woman, who was looking at me like she was looking at prey, has short black hair; her haircut looks like a Karen's and she was wearing a normal work suit. She's shorter than the man and must be around 170 cm tall?

Coincidentally, her name was also Karen.

Violet displays a small smile and speaks while her eyes are closed; "Lucy, I don't think you should know something about my life? Why don't you go back to your mommy who gave you that feminine name?" she spoke in disdain.

Damn, woman. That was wild, is it okay to talk like that to a guest? Not that I care.

Lucy gently adjusts his glasses as his hands shake a little.

Cough!

He pretended to cough and looked at Violet.

"Lady Violet, you're right." He leans back on the couch and says, "I came here for one reason only, I want permission to bring a lot of vampires to this town."

Oh? I start watching the man.

Violet opened her eyes and they were glowing red: "Lucy, this is my territory, and I don't accept other vampires in my territory that aren't connected to my family. You know that, and yet you come to ask me about it? Are you looking for war?"

"I wouldn't dare, I intend to live for a few thousand years yet. I don't intend to offend Clan Snow for something small like this." He spoke with a small smile.

Violet remains silent and waits for Lucy to continue his words.

"You know, Lady Violet, I'm a very scared man. I'm very scared of dying and, because of that, I need to defend myself; I don't want to die from a bullet in my head." He spoke while making exaggerated gestures.

Violet opens her eyes a little, she seems to understand what he was trying to convey, then she continued in a bored tone: "The Inquisition"

## Chapter 05: The Inquisition.

"The Inquisition?" I speak to myself out loud.

"Oh!" Lucy claps his hands in a startled gesture: "Lord Husband doesn't know what that is? How long have you been a vampire? Don't tell me you're a newborn?" He spoke in a neutral tone, but it was pretty clear he was trying to tease me.

"I didn't expect the princess of Clan Snow to have a plebeian husband, I think hell must be frozen by now." The woman next to Lucy said.

They're really trying to piss me off, but unexpectedly, I don't feel a thing about them. The feelings I have are something like this, do you care what a bug thinks of you? I don't care, and I think that's why I don't feel anything.

"Is this your attempt to provoke me? Childish." I speak honestly.

"Huh?" Lucy exclaimed, a little surprised. I realized the woman was surprised too, but I ignored her. I think they thought I would be angry since, according to Violet, newborns are very likely to lose control of their emotions.

"I would understand if you were a newborn who was talking to me, but you're an older vampire, right? Why are you being so aggressive? Are you menstruating? Or do you have a dick in your ass all the time? Is this woman not satisfying you? I think I should call Little Timmy for you."

"Timmy?" Lucy asked confused

"Oh, you don't know the legendary Timmy?" I spoke with an unbelieving expression, it was like I was looking at two rare animals. "I guess that living for so long does not mean that you are a man

knowledgeable in modern affairs." I spoke in disdain.

"Let me enlighten you, my little lamb. Timmy is a church boy, he's two meters tall, muscular, and he loves to purge vampires with his holy wand, I think he would love to bond with you." I said with a small smile.

"...."

"Pfft" Violet inadvertently let out a small laugh for a few seconds, but soon she returned to her noble expression as she kept a small smile on her face.

Lucy's smile slowly began to break. Slowly, and as if it were a lie, Lucy's mask began to fall apart. "Do you want to die, boy?" He spoke with an angry and aggressive tone; in front of me is just an older vampire who is sadistic and likes to kill.

"Oh? As expected from an older vampire, you're definitely getting senile." I sneered as I ignored Lucy.

"Lucy, where do you think you are right now?" Violet spoke with a small smile on her face that showed all her sharp teeth.

The air was suddenly heavy, Lucy could feel killing intent all over the mansion and small beads of sweat began to appear on his face, realizing the stupid thing he did, Lucy's expression does a 360-degree turn, and soon he starts to smile 'gently'.

Cough!

He pretended to cough, and spoke in an apologetic tone:

"I'm sorry about that slip, Lady Violet."

The killing intent disappears as if it never existed, but the atmosphere of surveillance still lingers in the air; something tells me that if Lucy tries to do something, he won't stay alive for long.

Well, I must surely praise how quick he is at controlling his emotions, as expected of an older vampire I guess?

"Violet, what is The Inquisition?" I ignored Lucy, and spoke directly to Violet.

"The Inquisition is an organization made by the Vatican Church; they train humans to hunt down the vampires that are causing trouble in the human world. They use blessed holy water weapons, and chant bible verses to cause permanent damage to vampire mind"

"Oh, so they are vampire hunters" I said carefree. Why was I calm? Well, it's simple, there's no point thinking about a problem that hasn't happened yet; you'll just get stressed out trying to control the things you don't have control over.

And, at the end of the day, you become a paranoid and stressed person. The only thing I have to do right now is to learn more about this world and about the changes in myself. After all, I'm still a newborn, a little fish that has just been born in a new lake.

"Yes," Violet agreed.

I reach up to Violet's ear and say, "I tested in my room that the cross of Jesus doesn't affect me, so am i immune?"

"You are not immune to church attacks, what you have in your room is just a normal item. The items used by the church are blessed by the Pope himself, the closest figure to god we have in this world."

"So does God exist?" I asked curiously.

"I don't know, but I think so? After all, those weapons affect us." Violet replies, a little confused.

Church, huh? I can't help but think out of curiosity, the church has been active for millennia, so this organization that works for the church must have a lot of influence in the world.

"Lady Violet, will you accept my request?" Lucy asked.

Violet looks at Lucy and replies, "No, this is my territory and I don't accept other vampires, even if the Inquisition is here; I and my family can handle it."

Hmm, I think this decision is wrong. I don't have much knowledge of the overall situation but one thing I can say is, I shouldn't trust Lucy. I get a tingling feeling every time I look at him. Oh, I already know.

"Honey, why don't you give our friend permission?"

"Darling?" Violet looks at me with questioning eyes.

I just smile at her, she looks at me confused, but she nods; like she's telling me to do whatever I want. Isn't she cute?

"Lucy, how many vampires do you intend to bring into my wife's territory?" I look at Lucy.

He evaluates me for a few seconds and responds: "Fifty vampires"

"Oh that's too much, are they all your offspring?"

"Yes, they are my slaves."

"I see, you want to protect yourself from The Inquisition, right? We accept your request, you can bring the vampires, but..." I look at Kaguya who was behind the sofa, and say a few words then Kaguya nods and disappears, a few seconds later Kaguya comes back with the city map in hand.

I place the map on the table in front of me, and with the pencil Kaguya also brought, I make a big circle on the map.

"Keep your minions out of this circle" I said while showing a circle on the region map, this circle surrounds Violet's mansion and my house which for some reason was quite close to this mansion.

Lucy looks at the circle on the map and nods his head, he looks at Violet for a few seconds as if asking permission, Violet nods her head in agreement.

Soon, he got up from the couch and extended his hand: "Thank you very much, Lord Victor. I am indebted to your generosity"

I flash a smile and get up from the couch, "Don't worry, friends were meant to be helped, right?" I look at his hand and shake it in a friendly gesture.

I suddenly feel like he put more strength in his handshake, it feels like he's trying to break my hand, but he doesn't have enough strength... Isn't he an older vampire? He must be strong, right? Well, he asked for it.

My smile grows unevenly, my sharp teeth start to show, and soon I just put a little more strength in my grip.

Crack!

His hand is shattered, but everyone ignores it except Violet who was looking at Lucy as if she were looking at a dead man walking.

Lucy looks at his hand for a moment, then he looks at Violet: "Until another day, Lady Violet"

Violet didn't say anything, she just nodded her head softly.

Soon Kaguya escorts the two guests out of the mansion

I sit down on the couch again, and Violet climbs into my lap:

"What are you planning?" She asked as she wrapped her arms around my neck.

"Bait, Lucy is my worm that will attract the big fish"

Violet opens her eyes a little and then she flashes a smile, "Aren't

you getting used to this vampire thing a little too quickly?"

"Meh, vampires are no different from humans; after all, they were once human." I reply, then I continue: "When I went to my mother's work in the past, I learned a few things from the politicians my mother defended in court"

"Lies and truth are a fine line, politicians have to live telling lies to get the jobs they have today"

"Lucy, he's a lot like these politicians, he's a scared fox; he wants to take advantage of every situation, you should know him better than me"

Violet nods, "Lucy is a vampire who specializes in bringing food to noble vampires, he has good ties to noble families."

"By 'food' you mean..."

"Humans," Violet spoke mercilessly.

So that's why The Inquisition is here, they are after Lucy. It seems that using Lucy as bait was a good idea. I need to know the capabilities of this human organization and though I can ask Violet to tell me, that would be useless; there is a big difference between seeing one person's capabilities in person, and someone else telling you about it.

I just nodded my head in agreement with Violet's words, but I felt a weird incongruity in my chest. Common sense is that I should care about this, after all, they're human beings, right? But why don't I feel anything?

It's the same feeling as when I see a newspaper or television, you know people are hurting but you don't care; I think seeing and experiencing tragedy is very different from just knowing it through someone else's mouth, huh?

"Normally, noble vampires don't need human blood."

"Huh?" I don't understand now, isn't that against everything being a vampire is?

Violet looks at me: "You can suck blood from humans if you want, but that won't quench your thirst. The noble species are a very strong type of vampire and, because of that, we need more blood than normal vampires. To avoid of us having to cause a mass genocide, we ask the witches to do a ritual where when we get married so we will quench our thirst with our partner."

Oh, that's why when I went crazy, I'd rather drink Violet's blood than those men.

"But there are vampires who get bored drinking their wife's blood all the time. Because of that, vampires like Lucy exist; they kidnap humans and take them to the noble vampires who want to taste 'new flavors'"

Got it, vampires are treating humans like cattle, huh?... Witches... For some reason, I smell trouble a mile away when it comes to witches.

"Witches?" I question Violet, I really know next to nothing about this world, huh? Although some things are similar to movies.

"Witches are human women who, for some reason, acquire an energy called magic. They use that magic to alter some things related to nature. Do you remember the magic circle you saw in my memories?"

I nod in agreement.

"They were also created by the witches at the request of the ancient vampires"

"They'll do anything for money, they're mercenaries; if you pay the

right price, they'll do anything for you."

Heh, mercenary witches... Interesting, I flashed a small smile as I started to stroke Violet's hair.

I feel Violet squirm in my arms, but I keep stroking her hair. Violet's hair is my favorite type of hair for women, long hair so I can stroke it as many times as I want, I feel like I will never get bored doing this.

Soon, Kaguya returns accompanied by Natalia, the blonde-haired maid. I also see that the vampires that were hiding in the fake walls were all in the basement now.

"Lord Victor, I think that is enough, if you continue I think Lady Violet will die." Kaguya spoke in a neutral, emotionless tone, but for some reason, I could feel she was joking.

I look at Violet and see that she was a flushed mess, her breathing was ragged and she was looking at me with obsessive eyes, hmm. But I did not do anything? I just caressed her...

Looking out the window, I saw it was dawn, I have to go to college.

"Looks like I have to go back." I said out loud.

Hearing my voice, Violet quickly wakes up from her drunken state, and looks at me, "You want to go back? But what's the point of studying now? You're my husband, and everything mine is yours, you just have to live here with me!"

I look at Violet: "Calm down, I don't want to be a parasite that depends on my wife... I mean, it would be nice to let you be my SugarMama, but I'm a vampire, not a degenerate."

"Why are you going back to college then?" Violet asked a little calmer.

"Honestly? I was studying economics in order to get a degree and somehow help my family. After all, my family situation is not the same as when I was 15." I answer honestly, then I continue: "I even got a job at McDonutus that pays me \$15 an hour, I used that money to pay for my college, but..."

I look at my hand, I focus my feelings on my pale hand, "Now that's not necessary, there are several ways to make money with my current condition."

"And I'm not willing to abandon my family, if I'm not close to my mom, she'll get bored. After all, with her personality she wouldn't make many friends." I laughed a little when I thought of my mom. Though I became a vampire, I don't intend to abandon my family and friends.

I'm not going to act like an emo, and say that I'm going to put my family in danger, and because of that, I need to abandon them.

I may have changed my race, but I'm me, I make my own decisions. And, since I know there's a way I can't go crazy from bloodlust, the worry of hurting my family is practically non-existent.

"So you go to college just because you want to?" Violet asked me confused.

"Yes, I'm going to quit my job and go to college to enjoy school life a little. Because of my illness, I've always lived in fear of trying too hard. Because of my illness, I couldn't enjoy much of my life, but that's not an obstacle anymore." I said honestly. I always wanted to play sports, I always wanted to swim, to play basketball, but because of my illness I couldn't do that kind of activity.

I look at Violet, "Don't you want to come with me?"

"Huh...?"

"Well I want to introduce you to my family, you are my wife, right? You have to meet my family and friends."

I plan to invite her to live with me since, if Violet comes to live with me, there will be few things that threaten my family's life. After all, these vampires seem to obey Violet's every word, if she is living with me, that will ensure that my family is protected.

Violet displays a happy smile and starts hugging me again, I laugh and start stroking her head, she looks so happy.

"Yes! I'll go with you! In fact, I'm going to live with you! Let's go!" She spoke happily as she got up and pulled me somewhere.

Well, it looks like I don't need to ask her to move in with me, she did it herself. I thought as I smiled satisfied.

"Wait." I spoke in a neutral tone, Violet looked at me: "If you want to live with me, you have to promise to protect my family."

"Oh, is that it? That is something easy to do, few people would dare to mess with my family." She said smiling, then she continued:

"My family is your family too, right? We are married! Of course, I would protect your family!" She spoke with a proud smile.

I can't help stroking this woman's head, isn't she very beautiful?

"Lady Violet was manipulated, right?" Kaguya whispered in a not-so-low voice.

"Yes, and probably, she doesn't even care about it," Natalia replied.

"Sigh, we're lost, what if Lord Victor decides to get his hands on us?" Kaguya spoke in a neutral tone with exaggerated gestures.

"I doubt that would happen, he seems to have no interest in us, and Violet would probably kill us if that happened" Natalia replied again in a flat tone.

"True, a stalker's love is something difficult to understand,"

Kaguya said.

"Shh, don't say that, what if someone hears you?" Natalia spoke in a louder voice.

"...."

Are these women right in the head?

## Chapter 06: The most 'normal' parents in the world.

February 2nd, the day after Victor discovered the changes in his body.

I was walking towards my house with Violet clinging to my arm with a really big smile on her face. Currently, only one thing concerns me.

How the hell am I going to explain the changes in my body to my mom?

I look into the mirrored window of a building next to me. I was 175CM before I became a vampire, I was a very thin young man who looked very anemic, but when I became a vampire I grew 5CM in height.

I'm 180 cm tall now with more defined muscles that stand out a little in the outfit I'm wearing. My pale skin has turned a paler shade than it was before, while my black hair and blue eyes have taken on a brighter shade. Overall, I looked the same as before, with the only differences being that my body grew and my skin turned paler.

By the way, I was wearing casual clothes, a loose black shirt and black pants along with white sneakers from a famous brand.

Violet was wearing a black dress, it was a closed-neck sleeveless dress made of leather. The dress was a little short, reaching up to her beautiful thighs almost showing the flesh of her ass. For a moment I think I actually drooled, it was very sexy, especially glued to her body with her perfect curves.

When she saw my gaze she displayed a seductive smile as if everything went according to plan.

According to my wife Violet...the vampire transformation forces the body to its peak state and, as I am a newborn, these changes will only stop happening when my body is fully developed. She said that usually, it takes a week for the body to stop constantly evolving.

I look at the clock on my phone and it's currently seven in the morning. Normally this wasn't the time for vampires to be awake, but Violet and I were special so we just looked like a tourist couple from the North Pole or from some other area of the coldest parts of the planet, although I don't know if civilization exists at the North Pole.

Why do Violet and I look like tourists? Well, our pale skin color draws a lot of attention and, to my limited knowledge, humans who live in snowy areas of the planet tend to have paler skin color (I think? I'm not sure, I wasn't the brightest student in geography at school). Anyway, we look like two tourists who have come from a very cold place. After all, no one would believe that two vampires are walking around in broad daylight.

When Violet and I stopped at a location that she was interested in, the salesperson asked if I was a tourist, and I said yes, I also said that we lived in a really icy area.

Surprisingly, he agreed with my words easily. Well I live in the United States Of America so I guess tourists around here are normal?

And Violet? I look at my wife, she seems to be having fun, she seems to consider walking back to my house as some sort of date or something. Apparently, she hasn't left the house for a few years, (she told me this by accident) and, because of that, she's curious about everything. She looks like a curious kitten, if anything catches her attention she stops walking and moves toward it, then, if she finds something interesting, she buys it and asks Kaguya, who is accompanying us, to take it. She was like a princess who went to the mall and bought everything she saw and liked... Rich people are different...

It wasn't until Kaguya came out into the sun that I found out she

was from the same family as Violet. Apparently, she's from a family dedicated to serving Violet's family; she didn't explain much to me about it.

An interesting thing about Kaguya is that she is a vampire who only inherited immunity to the sun, she doesn't have control of Violet's fire element.

She seems to have an ability called 'shadows'; basically she becomes one with a shadow and can walk in the shadows... This is a very broken skill, she can pretty much kill anyone at night.

"Ugh, Lady Violet. You are buying too many things, the thin arms of this helpless young woman can't take it. I wonder if there is any man who can help me?" Kaguya spoke in a neutral tone as she looked at me with bright eyes.

Who do you think you are kidding, woman? You? Helpless? Is this some kind of joke?

I just turn my face away and ignore Kaguya.

"Tsk"

Did I hear a 'Tsk' just now? Shouldn't this woman be calm and cool or something? Is her mask falling off?

"Hahaha, I'm glad you're getting along with Kaguya, but..." Violet looks at Kaguya, "Don't get too close, okay?"

She spoke with an emotionless face, I could see it was just a simple warning, but that it contained many meanings I didn't understand.

"Yes. Don't worry, Lady Violet. I take my job very seriously." Kaguya spoke in a neutral tone that carried unshakable confidence.

Kaguya looked a little nervous.

I stroked Violet's hair: "Let's keep walking, help me think of a way to fool my mom."

Suddenly, Violet becomes more docile, and says: "Yes!"

I look at Kaguya with a smug face, Kaguya just turns away and ignores me.

Seriously. Where is Violet's family finding these interesting people? It's been a while since I've had fun like this, I thought with a smile on my face.

"Darling, why don't you charm your mother?" Violet spoke suddenly.

"Oh, are you talking about that skill from the movies? Do I look at someone, and tell them to do whatever I want?"

"Yes," Violet nods her head as she continues walking with me. "You don't need to do a very difficult one just something like, 'Ignore the changes in my appearance'"

To be honest, I was inclined to do that, but I feel it would give me a bad taste in my mouth to charm my family. Hmm? I look to the side and see police cars speeding past.

Vrummm! Vrummm!

The police were chasing a truck and, just for a few moments, I sensed a familiar smell. I decided this was a good opportunity to test my new senses, I take the cheap black glasses I bought and put them on my face (the glasses only cost 5 dollars), they were very big and unfashionable glasses and the lenses appeared to be very dark too, I bought these glasses for one reason only.

When I use my red vision my eyes change to blood red, to avoid drawing attention, I bought some big black glasses. After all, even though I'm wearing glasses, I can still see with this special vision.

I switch to my red vision, and soon my world turns red, I focus my vision on the truck and realize there are 20 vampires inside the vehicle.

"20 vampires, huh?" I spoke in a low voice.

"Can you see that far?" Violet asked, a little shocked. She could do the same, she could look at things far away like she was looking very close, but my vision was more stable, and it wasn't affected by visible obstacles like buildings, houses, metal walls, etc...

This was a good skill for reconnaissance.

"Yes. I think those are Lucy's subordinates?" I spoke in a disinterested tone. I said it because I smelled the old vampire stench from those vampires that were in the truck; I only smelled it for a few seconds, but it was enough to recognize them.

"Hmm, he's getting a lot of attention, if he's not killed by the Inquisition, he'll die by the claws of noble vampires." Violet spoke in a non-caring tone, she probably has some of her people looking into this matter.

Suddenly Violet stops walking and looks at a big bear that was being sold in a children's store... Just out of curiosity, I looked at the price of the bear, and it cost 25 thousand dollars, what the fuck!?

Isn't that just a bear? How is it so expensive!?

Violet suddenly starts running at the speed of a normal human girl, and enters the store.

Seeing Violet buying the bear and hugging it, I can't help but say... She's adorable, damn!

"Kaguya, why are the nobles going to kill Lucy?"

Kaguya, who was carrying Violet's bags, spoke in the same neutral tone. "It's because he broke the rules."

Kaguya looks at me and says: "Rule number four of being a vampire, never reveal that you are a vampire to humans; matters involving the vampire world should not be mixed with human affairs... This rule can be ignored if the vampire is contacting a human with the intention of turning the same human into a vampire."

"If he breaks this rule, he'll be hunted by the Nobles and killed. After all, we don't like to draw too much attention"

Said the woman who was dressed as a maid while carrying several purchases; if that's not attracting attention, what is? But, I understood what she was saying, this rule was basically a warning to younger vampires: 'Don't make too much of a fuss about vampires, or we'll go after you.'

They were basically saying that.

Soon Violet comes back carrying a big bear and with a happy face, I can't help but pat her head when I see her like this.

Feeling my caresses, she shows a happy smile, then I say: "Come on, we're almost there"

The two women nod in agreement.

...

Arriving at my house, I open the door.

"Mom, I'm home!" I spoke out loud.

"Victor!? Son, why didn't you answer the phone!? I was getting—" She trails off as she looks at me standing in the doorway along with two women.

"Victor...?" She approaches me suspiciously.

I look at my mom. She's going to be 40 this year; she has a little

belly fat but, overall, her appearance is well preserved, long black hair, blue eyes and a curvy body. She keeps saying that lawyers who look good have a better chance of getting rich clients.

My mother's clients in the past were politicians with questionable résumés, they called these politicians 'fat lambs' and she defended these politicians in exchange for large amounts of money. She not only defended politicians, she defended normal people and even companies that had suffered because of fraud, etc. She's a good lawyer, even if she defended corrupt politicians, in the end, it doesn't matter.

After all, work is work, does she defend corrupt politicians? Yes, but the money is good, and she's not doing anything illegal, even though she stopped doing it a long time ago (it was getting dangerous to work in that world), because of that decision she made in the past, she doesn't win as much money as she had before.

"Strange..." She spoke with a confused face, then she continued: "I feel that you are my son, but at the same time, I feel that you have changed too much to be my son." She is still honest as always, she was standing in front of me looking at me with a face that said 'you can't fool me'.

"Sigh, when I was 13, you and I went out to a restaurant; we met your ex-friend, that woman you called 'Thot'," I started to speak.

"What is her name?" She asked.

"Aphrodite" I know her name is Renata, but my mom dubbed her Aphrodite.

"That is still not enough!" She spoke as if she hadn't lost a battle or something like that.

"On my 21st birthday, you took me outside a brothel and said you'd dump me in that place if I didn't find a girlfriend."

Violet suddenly looked at my mom for a moment, she seemed undecided about what to do; her eyes were glowing dangerously, but soon the light seemed to fade, it looked like she was going through an internal conflict.

Cough!

My mother pretended to cough:

"Yes, you are definitely my son. By the way, you shouldn't say that out loud. What will people think of me if they find out I almost gave away my son's cherry just because I wanted my son to have a girlfriend?" She spoke with a snort.

My eyes start to twitch when I hear what my mom says, but I can't help but smile in happiness. My mom is weird but she's a good mom, she's not 'normal' like all moms of the world, but she is my mother and I love her very much as a son.

She approaches me and says: "You're paler than usual, do you need food? And it looks like you've grown too." she puts her hand on her head and starts trying to measure my height by comparing her height with mine

My mother's height is around 170 CM, she is a little shorter than my old height before being turned into a vampire which was 175 CM.

"It's puberty, mom" I said the excuse every man ever has told his mother at least once in his life.

"Puberty...?" She repeated what I said with distrust.

She looks at Violet and Kaguya.

Seeing how beautiful both women were, my mother started to enter her own world again.

"Holy shit!! You popped your cherry and because of it you grew!? Kyaa! Wait a moment! I'll call your father!" Suddenly she starts running

towards the stairs, she puts both hands close to her mouth like she has to call someone.

"Leon!! Get down here immediately!! I mean it!! Get your lazy, fat belly down here now!!" she screamed.

Because of my new senses, I heard this scream louder than it should have been, and from Kaguya and Violet's stunned expressions I can tell they had the same reaction as me.

"What is it, woman!? I am watching a movie!! I still have to work later!! I want to finish this movie before I go to work!!"

"Our son lost his cherry and brought two beautiful girls home!!"

"What!? Wait a moment!! I am on my way!!"

Violet and Kaguya look at me, I try to keep my poker face as much as possible to hide my embarrassment, yes! Let's think about dolphins, dolphins are beautiful beings, and they have the intelligence of a human, umu! As expected, dolphins should be the rulers of humanity.

As I hypnotized myself, my dad started down the stairs.

When he appears in front of me, he looks at Kaguya and Violet, then he nods at me satisfied, "As expected of my son, the mason genes are running through your veins, you've got two beautiful girls! One oriental and one with a noble appearance! I was worried that you would be a virgin forever!"

He totally ignored my appearance, didn't he!? Ugh, for some reason I have a headache, although I shouldn't have a headache, since I'm a vampire and vampires have regenerative bullshit or something.

I look at my dad, he's turning 50 this year, he has brown hair and black eyes, he is 183 CM tall with a beer belly and muscular arms, he

was wearing shorts and a white t-shirt.

He's a bricklayer, he works in construction, nowadays he's retired but he still goes to where he works to give advice or something, I don't really know for sure. I just know he's retired, but for some reason he says he's going to 'work', I guess old habits don't change, huh?

Cough!

I give a fake cough and go, "Violet, this is my dad Leon Walker, and this is my mom Anna Walker" I say as I introduce my parents.

"Nice to meet you," Violet says while performing in her noblewoman's mask.

"Mom and Dad, this beautiful white-haired woman is Violet, she is my wife, and this black-haired woman is her personal maid."

"...Huh...?"

## Chapter 07: Daughter-in-law.

At this point, I was in my house sitting on a relatively large and cheap couch, not that I care about anything like that, and Violet was sitting next to me while Kaguya was behind me holding the bear Violet had bought while she put away everything else that was Violet's behind the couch.

Right now I was thinking about the decisions I made about my family and, seeing the result, I think I made the right decision. My family is strange ... but I love my parents very much and, if possible, I don't want to hide anything from them. I know the vampire world isn't something ordinary humans can handle and, because of that, I made a deal with Violet to just keep the vampire world a secret, but that's only temporary.

After all, I know this kind of secret will bite my ass in the future. I learned a lot from reading hero comics, they always had this bullshit attitude of hiding things and, in the end, someone important to the hero died, but...

I need to learn more about the world of vampires. When I'm ready, I will talk to my parents about this world then, after all, I want to give them this 'gift' too, immortality... It's something everyone wants, and my parents are no exception, I guess...

And, I don't want to be alone forever; I know I would have my wife, but I can't imagine living without my bundle of joy that I call Mom... I would miss my father too, and his company when I watch movies...

Well, no use thinking about it now, this is something for the future.

"So, you're saying you've been in contact with Violet for several years and, just recently, you guys met and started dating?" My mother, Anna, asked in disbelief.

"Wrong, we became husband and wife." Violet spoke with a noble smile.

"You skipped the boyfriend stage and went straight to the wedding, are you sure about that son?" My dad asked, and I knew what he was thinking when he asked that question. He was probably thinking something like, you're so young! You've got a lot of fish in your net to catch, are you sure you want to commit now!? Marriage is not a good thing, you know!!

I'm pretty sure he was thinking about it since we've had this kind of conversation in the past.

Although I'm absolutely sure he said it just for the sake of it. After all, his happy smile has never left his face...

"Yes, we have been dating online for about three years now and, when we first met, it was like love at first sight; I'm sure I want to be with her forever." I say with a small smile as I confirm the story Violet and I created.

Violet's noble mask starts to break into pieces and she starts to smile happily; as soon as she hugs me tighter, my mother looks at Violet and shakes her head several times as if she has understood something:

"I've taught you many times not to be a Simp, and you've been chasing this cute girl for three years? My son, if you liked her, you should talk on the first day!! You shouldn't wait for three years!" My smile starts to crack and my eyes start to twitch.

"Woman, I said forget about those topics. Simp!? You are being infected over the internet! Forget that word for the love of all gods!!" I practically yelled, my mom is always up to date with useless stuff, seriously... Should I cancel this house's internet?

It's better that I not, if I do that maybe my mother will die...

My mom just looks at me and sticks out her tongue, she looks like a kid. It's because of that jovial attitude that she doesn't have older friends... Wait, I think Travis' mom is her friend?

Travis is my childhood friend who lives two houses away from where I live.

My dad was dead serious, he looked like a politician who was about to make an important decision. Of course, that politician's important decision was probably about stealing income from a children's school, or stealing from another politician.

"So, did you or didn't you?"

"Father!?"

"Did you or didn't you? You know what I'm talking about, penetration of the sacred cave, drowning the goose, letting the dragon drink the divine nectar, double cultivation, etc. There are several names..."

"No need to be ashamed, at the end of the day, this is a normal act. No matter what society says, the act of drowning the goose is not a sin!" He looked like a wise man right now, looks like he's reached nirvana or something.

My mom suddenly gets up and hits him on the head. "Stop embarrassing our son, what if he loses his wife over this? Do you know how difficult it will be for him to get another woman!? Do not screw it up!"

Mother!? You don't have any confidence in me, huh?

My dad makes an apologetic face. My mom looks at me. "And...? Did you or didn't you!?"

Woman, did you forget what you said a few seconds ago!? That thing about not embarrassing me?

Ugh. "Can we just forget about it at once? Don't you have any other questions to ask?" I spoke with a desperate face.

The two look at each other and shrug. "We don't."

Huh...? Now I'm confused.

"Victor, you're 21 years old, you're an adult and your mom and I have confidence in you. We always think you've got your head in the right place, you were never like other teenagers and you never gave us any problems, so we trust your decision."

"Father...Mom..." I didn't know they thought of me that way; for some reason, this trust made me happier.

"And...? Did you do it!?" the two asked at the same time.

My smile threatened to break now...

"Yes, we did." Violet replied with an amused smile.

Violet!? Looking at her embarrassed face, I understood that she was confusing the act of sucking blood with sex.

"...."

They both look at me in disbelief, then they flash the biggest smile I've ever seen in my life.

"Did you hear that, honey!? They did it!! We have to buy fireworks!! Let's go out now!" My mom suddenly ran upstairs.

"Hey, wait for me! I have to buy the biggest fireworks I can, let's celebrate!! This is a happy occasion!! Damn, I wish it was Saturday, I could have a barbecue!" My dad got up and ran after my mom.

Soon the two come down with clothes and with the car keys in hand. "We'll be back soon, take care! And don't do anything your dad and I wouldn't." my mom said and winked at me.

It was pretty obvious that she was hinting at me to do something.

I just looked at it all in disbelief. When my mom and my dad left in the car, I looked at the door for a few seconds and started laughing.

I really love my family.

"Lord Victor's family is..." Kaguya spoke.

"Weird?"

"I would say amusing, but the gentleman is the one who said that." Kaguya replied.

This maid...

"Somehow, it makes me a little jealous; my mom and dad would never talk to each other like that." Violet spoke with a sad little smile, "They've spent so much time together they can't stand to see each other's faces"

I touch Violet's head and start stroking her head. "We won't be like that, right?" She spoke looking at me, she touched my other hand, and I could feel she was shaking a little.

"I don't know," I answered honestly while stroking Violet's hair, then I continued, "I may not be very experienced, but I can say something, relationships are a two-way street; if we strive to make it right, I believe that it will work."

"I don't think I'll ever regret turning you into a vampire, Victor... But there's one thing I'll always regret"

"What is it?" I asked curious.

She squeezes my other hand tighter. "I should have stopped those two bitches from being close to the ritual." she spoke in a poisonous tone that carried a lot of hate.

Two bitches? Is she talking about those voices? Why didn't she want them both close to the ritual?

I look at Kaguya, and she shakes her head in a gesture that says she won't say anything.

I look at Violet and see her with a murderous expression. I don't know what's going on, but one thing I'm sure of, If a woman is insecure, you must show confidence that everything will be fine (advice from my mother).

"Don't worry Violet" She looks at me confused, I move closer to her face, and then I kiss her. She is surprised for a moment, but soon she kisses me back.

But, since we're both inexperienced, our teeth bump into each other.

We both stopped kissing and looked at each other, and soon started to laugh a little.

"Don't worry about things you can't control, it will cause you stress. I recommend you enter the school of stoicism, it will help you a lot."

"Stoicism? What is it?" Violet asked.

"It's a philosophical doctrine that emerged in Greece in the 4th century, some of its teachings are quite useful." I said a little joking and a little serious.

Violet looks at Kaguya, Kaguya nods and then she disappears. For a moment I saw her running towards the door, she probably went to buy a book or something.

I'm slowly getting used to Kaguya's speed, but I still can't follow her with my eyes.

But two bitches, huh? As I expected, more things happened after

I bit Violet. I can think of two things that happened, I bit the other two female voices like I did with Violet (which I think is very unlikely, after all, Violet said the ritual can only be done by one person).

Or those two voices did something to me (I'm inclined to believe this one since Violet is quite protective of me, and I don't remember what happened in the ritual either).

Well, it's no use thinking about it too much now, I'll just keep this in mind until I find out more, I have to sort out more important things now.

...

Currently, I am at the university. Before going to the university, I passed my job and resigned from McDonutus; I plan to earn money in a more practical way... I will rob thieves.

Think about it, if you have the power of a superhuman, what will you work for? Be a good law-abiding citizen? Pff, the politicians themselves are the ones who steal the most, and they are the people who run this town. They just don't get caught, because they know how to hide their tracks.

So if I steal from a thief who stole from someone else, am I not a good person? Of course the money would be mine, and I wouldn't pay that money back or anything like that.

But, before that, I need three things, first: I need a fake SSN, a fake ID, and a fake bank account. (As I don't know about this, I will ask Violet or Kaguya, they must know something)

Second: I need a black mask.

Third: I need a black uniform as cringe as possible, those clothes that could only exist in anime like Tokyo Vampire or something like that (I need to make a persona, a thief who steals from other thieves).

Fourth (this is optional): I need some music; Imagine from John LennonVo.

Why do I need this song? No reason, and the sound of the piano soothes me too. I plan to listen to it while I'm at college.

First, I will rob thieves and make easy money, then I will put this money in a bank in a tax haven. By doing this several times, I can solve my money problems.

I could make it easier, I could just charm all the corrupt politicians and thieves etc. But I will avoid doing that for now, after all, I believe The Inquisition has something that can track vampires.

That's not too hard to deduce assuming they hunt vampires. Honestly? This organization would be flawed from the start if they had no means of tracking down vampires.

For now, I just need money; when I get money, I will think about what to do next.

I'm at college alone, Violet is at my house, she said something about renovation or something. Before she left, I had to unfortunately... I almost cry blood when I think about it again.

Cough!

UNFORTUNATELY, I had to delete my 'hardest game ever' folder, more than 2 terabytes of videos were deleted, I cried blood when I hit the 'delete' key on my computer, but it's all for the greater good.

Yes, it's all for the greater good. I keep repeating that sentence in my head like it's a mantra.

I can't have Violet finding out about that folder, goodbye bachelor life, goodbye my porn...

As I walked around the university, I noticed that people were

looking at me differently. Before ... they just looked at me and ignored me, but now, they're looking at me with a shocked face, and sometimes they let out a sigh of disbelief.

"Hey, do you know him?" A woman spoke in a low voice to her friend.

"Hmm, he looks familiar, but at the same time he doesn't look familiar." The friend replied.

"He looks hot..." I heard it from somewhere

"I still think the captain of the basketball team is better." A woman says

Well, I've changed a lot...

Anyway, I walk towards my classroom but suddenly stop when I hear the sound of a basketball.

Is our team playing today? I was curious; I am thinking about what to do now but, as I had decided that I just wanted to have fun at college, I decided to go to the basketball court. I was always interested in playing basketball, before I couldn't because of my disease, but now?

I clench my fist and the sound of bursting air is heard all around.

"Huh? What is that?" Several people started to question.

"Did it look like something broke?" a man said,

"Let's check the lab." another man spoke.

While ignoring the little chaos I caused, I wore a predatory smile, now I can play basketball!

I walk to the basketball court and, upon arriving at the basketball court, I see the university team playing a friendly match with the

reserve players from the same university, they must be training.

I pull my black sunglasses out of my pocket and put them on my face and, as soon as I activate my vision, my world turns red. I don't know why I do it, but it's kind of become a habit when I smell some weird smell, and when I walked into this court I could smell something. I don't know why my sense of smell is more developed than normal vampires, but Violet just said I was special, specifically speaking, my blood was special.

The RH null blood... Who would have thought that the blood that gave me so much trouble would benefit me in the future, life is ironic for sure.

Suddenly my vision focused on a silhouette that had a red glowing mark on its neck. Yes, it looks like there's a vampire inside.

I undo my red eyesight and take off my glasses and it turns out that the person who is the vampire is the captain of the basketball team... Good, just the person I hate the most.

## Chapter 08: Grudges from the past.

Luan Davis, the captain of my high school basketball team, if you asked me which person I hate the most, I would name this man.

Because of my illness, I was always in an anemic state, but that doesn't mean I couldn't do physical activities; in the past, when I was 20 years old, I was supervised by a physical educator who was my friend and, with his help, I could do light exercise. I've always had a craving since I was a teenager... I wanted to play sports.

Do you know what it feels like to want to swim, play basketball, run, exercise, and not be able to? Because of my illness, I couldn't exert myself too much because if I tried too hard, I would pass out. In some of the worst cases, if I tried too hard, I would spend a week in bed at the hospital.

But, despite that, my doctor said I could do light exercise, and for me, that was enough; I just wanted to get a basketball and play a little, even if I was alone.

But this man... Luan Davis, he wouldn't leave me alone. Every time I trained, every time I tried hard at something, he would come towards me and say:

"This is pathetic; Why is a loser like you striving for something useless? You should just stay in a hospital bed!" And, right after that, he hit me and threw me to the ground while saying that I shouldn't have been born, that I was just a burden to my mother.

The classic bullying that you can see in any American movie, he didn't hurt me too much, he just pushed me and told me I was useless while also saying that my mother shouldn't have given birth to me. But, I still wouldn't give up; I wasn't doing it for him, I was doing it for me.

However ... With time, I started to hate him. I accepted him talking

about myself, it doesn't affect me so much, but my mother!?! That is unforgivable. I knew that what I was doing was useless and that my condition didn't allow me to exercise, but he was the person who kept reminding me of how useless I was.

If there's one good thing about this situation, it's that I never cried or showed any weakness. I can be physically weak, but I refused to cry in front of anyone, I refused to show weakness; there's a glaring difference between being bullied and accepting bullying. I never accepted what happened to me, but unfortunately, I couldn't do anything.

One day I tried to report this to the director, but the director just ignored it, so I did what any sane person would do; I gave up practicing and waited for an opportunity to get revenge. Unfortunately, that opportunity never came; someone was supporting Luan Davis and I didn't know who it was, I didn't want to tell my parents either.

After all, that was my problem, it was about my pride, I had to solve it myself. Looking at Luan, I can see the vampire mark with my vision that I call 'vampiric vision'.

When I saw that brand, I understood everything; he had support, precisely speaking the support was from the master of this man. A noble vampire...

Why did I deduct this? Luan was just a boy who suffered from a disease that made his muscles weak, but, for some reason, everyone forgot about it, and he got better all of a sudden. I had forgotten about it too...

Wrong, it would be wiser to say that Luan's support was none other than a Vampire, and I, as an ordinary human, couldn't do anything against that force, but now?

Now things were different.

I see the basketball bouncing and stopping in front of me.

"Hey, you! Throw the ball over here!" Someone yelled at me.

I look at the ball and a smile appears on my face, I catch the ball in my hand and I start to bounce the ball on the ground as I walk slowly towards the court.

When I get close to the court, I position myself for a toss and I throw the ball like an experienced basketball player, the ball travels across the court and lands directly in the basket.

Everyone who saw this display of precision looked at me with disbelieving looks. What I did was impossible for the average human, but it's not totally impossible. NBA players can do it with a lot of practice, but I just used my vision combined with my vampire senses and for me, that was pretty easy. To be honest, I didn't need to position myself to throw the basketball, but if I didn't it would be pretty weird, right?

"Victor...?" I heard a voice in disbelief.

I look at the man, he is 190 cm tall with light brown hair and brown eyes, he had a delinquent rebel look boasting a muscular body and a sharp look.

"Hey, Luan... Did you miss me?"

"Is that Victor? The skinny one? What happened to him!?" A player standing next to Luan asked out loud.

I flashed a smile that for a moment showed my sharp fangs, those with low senses couldn't see it but, Luan, I'm sure he did.

I walk calmly towards Luan. "379 days..." I spoke with an irritated growl, "It's been 379 days since the moment you decided I was a good punching bag."

As I walked towards Luan, the players on the court started to get out of my way, they felt an invisible pressure forcing them to move, it

was like if they didn't get out of the way something really bad would happen to them: "I'm a very mean person, you know? I can't let grudges be washed away by the river of time."

As my father always said, an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth, punch for punch. And, now it would be something like blood for blood.

I stopped in front of Luan and looked up slightly, he was a little taller than me, and, as always, he had that cocky look on his face like he was superior to everyone, I don't like that.

"Heh, what do you intend to do? You're just a humble —" Luan tried to say something.

I gently place a hand on Luan's shoulder, and with a forceful gesture, I bring him to his knees.

Crack!

The ground around him broke like a spider's web.

Ahh~! Yes, that's the vision I wanted, that look of disbelief, that look of someone who thought he was on top only to be taken off his imaginary throne, but that's not enough.

My smile starts to grow, I lower my head and approach Luan. Slowly, my smile starts to grow erratically. Slowly, my teeth, like shark fangs, start to show. And, slowly, with a ragged smile that almost borders on insanity, I say,

"You had fun, right? Treating me like crap. Hitting me, saying I was useless. Badmouthing my mom. It was fun, right? I bet it was, after all, you always had a smile while doing it, right? It was like you were playing with an insect that could break at any moment, right?"

I put some strength in my hand and I felt his shoulder break, "But I ask you, now what?"

I must give Luan credit, he didn't show any expression when he

felt his shoulder being broken.

Looking at my fangs and my bloodshot eyes, he understood that I was just like him and soon an angry growl came out of him, "You're just a newborn!"

He tried to get up but he just stayed where he was; he didn't expect me to have that much strength.

"Who gave you permission to get up?"

He looked at me with a shocked face that made my smile grow wider and wider.

"Luan, is everything okay there?" someone asked.

"Y-Yes, we're just talking"

Hearing the students' murmurs, I click my tongue, annoyed, and release Luan. My expression is back to normal, my teeth back to normal, and my eyes back to their bright blue.

Now that I am calmer, I thought: This place has a lot of people.

I walk over to the basketball and pick it up.

"Let's settle this the old-fashioned way, after all, we're not barbarians, right?" I commented with a small smile, I notice his shoulder has already healed, as expected from vampire regeneration.

I threw the ball to Luan, when Luan caught it the force of the ball made him slide away from where he was; it just demonstrated once again how much stronger I was, even for a vampire who has been transformed for more than 1 year like Luan. I think my blood has given me some unexpected benefits, huh.

"1 on 1," I said while holding up my finger, "Whoever scores 7 points wins, each ball in the basket is worth 1 point. In case of a tie, we continue to play until a player has 2 points more than the

opponent"

"Simple, right?" I spoke with a small innocent smile.

"Huh? Why are you coming in here and treating it like the court is yours?" A player spoke.

I just looked at the player with a disinterested look, he was 160CM and looked like a very active teenager.

The player started to boil with anger when he saw my gaze, when he was going to start screaming again, Luan said:

"Okay, let's play." Luan gets up and that arrogance that I had eliminated in the previous conflict comes back stronger.

Heh, yes! That's how it's supposed to be! He has to act! It can't break that easily! I won't be satisfied otherwise!

...

It was decided that the judge would be a player who was too small to play on the basketball team. The two opponents used the entire court, on one side was Victor, a former aspiring basketball player, and on the other side was Luan, the captain of the basketball team.

"What is happening?" asked a red-haired woman.

Hearing the woman's question, a man quickly turned around and replied, "Apparently, the captain of the basketball team is going 1-on-1 with an aspiring basketball player."

"They seem to have a history together." Said another woman who was nearby.

"What do you mean? What happened?" Asked the redheaded woman.

"When that man arrived" The woman pointed at Victor. "He immediately got into conflict with the captain of the basketball team, it looks like the captain of the basketball team was bullying, or something, that man with the blue eyes"

"Oh?" The red-haired woman looks at the captain of the basketball team with a dangerous look; Isn't he that idiot's servant? The red-haired woman thought.

"But what are you doing here, Ruby? Shouldn't you be in med school on the other side of the building?" Answers the woman while looking at Ruby.

Ruby is a redheaded woman, she has long red hair that reaches her waist, green eyes, and pale skin like she's running out of blood. She's wearing a red sweatshirt with black jeans and athletic sneakers. She is a little shorter than the girl who was talking to her, around 175 CM tall. Ruby has a curvy body that can't be hidden by the baggy clothes she was wearing, and what's most impressive about Ruby's appearance is her breasts, which appear to be too big. This is also one of the reasons why she wears baggy clothes, she doesn't like people looking at her breasts.

"Oh, I heard a commotion and I came here to see what was going on," Ruby said as she went up the bleachers, she looked at Victor for a long time until she unconsciously grabbed her neck.

"Who do you think will win?" The woman next to Ruby asked.

Ruby lets go of her neck and sits down calmly. "I don't know." She spoke honestly

They won't use their powers here, right? Ruby suddenly looks at a spot and sees that spot is broken into a cobweb shape.

She felt her eyes twitch when she saw that little wreckage, which was obviously done by the two newborns on the basketball court.

"Miss Ruby, it's a surprise to see you here." Suddenly a blond man with green eyes appeared.

Coincidence? Of course, it wasn't a coincidence, she thought disdainfully, but nothing showed on her expressionless face.

Ruby looked at the blond man, he looked like a typical middle-aged nobleman, tall, with blond hair and green eyes.

Ruby points to the place that was destroyed, the man follows Ruby's finger and watches it for a moment: "I'll take care of it." he said in an annoyed tone.

Who was the fool who caused this? Tsk, it was probably my idiot of a dog. The blond-haired man thought with annoyance.

The man looks at Victor and Luan who have started to approach each other from the court.

The man sits down next to Ruby. "Whose newborn is this?" He spoke while looking at Victor with a haughty look, but he had a feeling he'd already seen Victor somewhere.

Ruby snorts in disdain when she sees the man's gaze, but she doesn't let it show on her face, she just responds in a neutral tone: "He is the husband of the princess of the Snow Clan."

Crack!

Ruby looked at the spot and saw that the man had broken the bleachers a bit, she just looked at the man with a 'are you serious' look? She had just suggested not to attract attention and he did.

I guess the apple doesn't fall far from the rotten tree, huh? Ruby thought as she associated the destruction on the court with the blonde man's subordinate.

"Hahahaha, you have got to be kidding, right? A plebeian with the princess of Clan Snow? Has hell frozen over and I didn't know about

it? Hahahaha"

Ruby was tempted to further tease this man by saying that the Snow Clan princess wasn't the only one, but she was silent: "Corneliu, I hope you punish your subordinate after this event, you know we don't like attention."

"Yes, of course... He will definitely be punished." the now-known man Corneliu spoke up.

Ruby looked at Corneliu and saw that the expression was distorted with hatred.

Heh, did just learning that Violet has a husband cause him to go crazy like that? Men and their inflated egos, ridiculous. Ruby thought in disdain.

As soon as the whistle blows, Ruby loses interest in Corneliu and looks at the court with neutral eyes.

## **Chapter 09: The only one who forgives is God, I don't.**

The match was about to start, on one side was a pale man with bright blue eyes and dark black hair, he was wearing a red and white uniform with the number 69, it was a standard basketball player's uniform. While this man warmed up, women couldn't help but stare at the defined muscles of that man with a little lust in their eyes.

Catching the girls' eyes, Victor looked around and thought, 'When did this become a show? Well, let's have fun', Victor displayed a toothy grin but, unlike before, those teeth weren't changing into shark-like teeth, it was just a normal smile that showed all of his white teeth.

"Hmm?" Suddenly Victor looks towards the bleachers, he could feel something in the bleachers calling to him, but he couldn't identify what it was.

"What are you doing, Lady Ruby?" Corneliu asked Ruby, confused when he saw her suddenly duck.

"I am just picking up something that fell," Ruby replied neutrally, as she wondered; Why did I hide!? Why did I hide!? You fool!

Losing interest, Victor focused on his opponent.

A tall man with brown hair and brown eyes, he looked like a delinquent. He was the man who made Victor's life hell for a year, the two men had unresolved issues and Victor wasn't planning on leaving the waters of times to wash away his grudge. He's not such a saint that he could forgive this man easily, he's a vindictive man.

As the saying goes: An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth, blood for blood.

Luan just looked at Victor with a cocky smile, but he couldn't help

but think about the things he did to Victor; seeing how it came back to bite his ass in the future, he was wondering if the attitude he had in the past was right. 'I think I should have killed him when I had the chance, after all, at the time his blood smelled really good', he thought contemptuously.

But despite thinking about it, he knew he couldn't kill someone, he wasn't prepared to take this step forward; for Luan, his master's blood is enough.

When the judge throws the ball up Luan, who was close to Victor, whispered in a low voice: "Don't use your gifts."

Victor snorted disdainfully and said in a low voice: "Tell that to yourself."

The two jumped at the same time then hit the ball simultaneously, an intense exchange took place for a few seconds in the air, but soon the winner was decided, Victor throws the ball to the ground and it bounces in his favor.

When he fell to the ground the noise was very loud, it was like a very heavy man fell on the court, but strangely, the ground did not break. The moment Victor falls to the ground, he runs at human speed towards the basketball, and as he catches the basketball in his hands, he turns and sees that Luan is already beside him.

Victor smiles and starts dribbling the ball, he makes some gestures with his hands to try to trick the opponent, but Luan is an experienced captain, he wouldn't fall into that trap, and Victor knew that.

Suddenly Victor brings the ball to Luan's face and drops the ball to the ground.

In making this sudden action, Luan's attention was completely focused on the ball slowly falling to the ground but, before the ball could land on the ground, a pale hand suddenly appeared and caught

the ball.

"My God, did he fake out the team captain? Wow, I can't believe he fell for such a simple trick." Someone from the stands spoke up.

When Luan hears this, he grits his teeth in frustration and turns to chase after Victor.

Victor runs while dribbling the ball to the middle of the court and when he entered the circle of the court, he suddenly jumped!

Everyone just stared in shock as they watched a human jump from the middle of the court and slowly reach the basketball hoop and bury the ball!

"Ohhhhhhhhhhhhh!!!" The crowd roared excitedly.

"That was a slam dunk! I can't believe I'm seeing a 21-year-old boy dunking!!"

"Damn, that was amazing!"

"How is that possible!?"

"Is this humanly possible!?"

"Hey, hey, what's his name?"

Victor, who was hanging from the rim of the basketball hoop, slowly broke free and fell to the ground. When he fell to the ground and turned around, he looked at Luan and saw that the man's expression was distorted with hate, it was too ugly to look at, but that expression filled Victor with satisfaction, slowly a predatory smile began to form on his face.

...

"Humpf, this newborn thinks highly of himself, any vampire can do what he did."

Ruby just looked at the blond man like she was watching a rare creature, he totally forgot he was in a crowd of people, huh?

Ruby looks at the girl who was next to her and, for a moment, her eyes turn blood red. "Ignore everything that man says, okay?"

"Okay," The woman replied in a robotic tone.

Ruby nods contentedly, her eyes soon turn green then she looks at Corneliu and says, "He's not using his gifts."

"Huh?" Corneliu looks at Ruby.

"If he was using his gifts, the basketball court, the basketball hoop, and everything else would be destroyed; he's just using the ability of a trained human. It's quite impressive that he can control his strength so well, and I think he doesn't even realize what he's doing," Ruby compliments him.

But Corneliu just snorted in disdain: "All newborn vampires can do that, he's no big deal." He spoke in a normal voice.

"Oh? Can you tell me which newborn vampires can do this? I'm curious." Ruby's green eyes sparkled a little in curiosity.

"..." Corneliu was silent and ignored Ruby.

Idiot, that's why female vampires hate you, your ego is the size of the world but it's also very fragile, you look like a child. Ruby thought with disdain

...

"What about the agreement not to use your gifts?" Luan asked in a hateful voice.

"I'm not using my gifts, I don't need to do something like that to defeat you," Victor spoke in disdain while maintaining an arrogant smile.

Luan's face twists into hate: "We'll see if you don't need to use your powers," he said in a hateful tone, he seems to have totally forgotten what he said a few seconds ago.

Again, both opponents were in the middle of the court.

The referee throws the ball up and blows the whistle.

The two opponents jump towards the ball, and again they fight in midair for a few seconds, but this time Victor loses.

Luan falls to the ground and catches the ball, he turns around and is about to run towards Victor's basket, but is stopped by Victor standing in front of him.

Luan starts dribbling the ball, and Victor tries to steal it, but Luan defends.

"It looks like the team captain has the advantage now."

"Of course, he wouldn't lose to a beginner!" One of the captain's most fanatical fans spoke.

Luan and Victor start running on the court, one was trying to make a basket and the other was trying to steal the ball.

Getting irritated by the impasse, Luan tries to push Victor using his vampire strength, but Victor doesn't move.

Crack!

"Ohhh!? What was that loud noise!? Are they ok!? I think I heard a bone-breaking," someone near the court yelled.

"You're right, I heard a cracking sound like something had broken." A man standing next to him spoke.

The audience was right, a bone broke, and it wasn't Victor's.

"heh? Why are you wearing that pained expression? Will you cry?"

"Just what are you made of?" Luan asked in shock as he felt his ribs healing; he tried to take down Victor, but it felt like he was trying to bring down a mountain.

Victor patted his chest and said, "I'm just built different."

Luan huffed, he suddenly pulled away from Victor.

"Is he trying to do a long shot? Is he crazy!? He's not even in the middle of the court yet!"

"Even if he's the captain, that is impossible for him to do, right?"

"He's crazy! He really threw the ball!!!"

"Fool," Luan said.

Victor looked at the ball in the air and started running towards the basket he was protecting, arriving at the basket, he just waits patiently for the ball to come down, if the ball enters the basket, bad luck for him, but if Luan misses, he is prepared for a counterattack.

The entire crowd just watches anxiously as they wait for the ball to drop.

Yes!

"The ball hit the hoop! He missed!" Someone from the crowd shouted.

"Heh, looks like the goddess of luck is not favoring you today," Victor takes the ball and looks at Luan who was running towards him, as he looked at Luan he thinks, 'The goddess of luck is a bitch, one time she pays attention to you but, eventually, she loses interest and looks at someone else, so I don't need her.'

Victor positions himself to throw the ball.

"Don't tell me!? Will he try to throw the ball from the end of the court!? He's crazy, that's impossible! He's definitely not going to make that!"

Realizing what Victor is going to do, Luan increases his running speed, with only seconds left before he gets in front of Victor.

"Too slow," Victor said.

Suddenly, Victor changes position and holds the ball with one hand then he throws the ball; as soon as he threw the ball, Victor started running at high speed.

"Huh!? What is he planning!?"

Baaam!

A thunderous noise was heard on the court, everyone looked stunned and saw that the ball hit the panel above the basketball hoop and bounced.

"Do not tell me! Was that his plan!?"

"HAHAHAHA!!" Victor chuckled with a manic smile on his face that showed all of his teeth.

Suddenly, Victor jumps up then catches the ball in the air and buries it in the basket!

"OHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!!"

"This man is insane!"

"Is he really human!? How did he run from the end of a court and still manage to catch the ball in midair!?"

"Fool! He planned it, and you didn't see he ran before he threw

the ball! If we calculate right, this feat is possible to do, it's just extremely difficult!" A man with black glasses spoke as he lifted his glasses, for some reason, the people standing nearby could see the man's glasses glowing.

Victor lets go of the basket's hoop and falls to the ground, then he looks at Luan with the same smile that shows all of his teeth: "Is this all you can do?" He teased him again.

Luan's expression starts to distort again, his expression was something to behold, he was extremely angry. 'Who does this newborn think he is!? He comes to my territory and challenges me!? Who does he think he is!? He's just trash! I do not accept this!'

Seeing Luan's expression constantly changing, Victor just smiled then smiled even more; he looked like a child who found a fun toy to break.

"... Oh, right," Luan spoke in a smug tone as if he realized something. "I think I shouldn't hold back anymore."

Victor stops smiling and looks at Luan, noticing that his atmosphere has changed, he says in disdain: "Heh, and what happened to the agreement not to use powers?"

"You've been using your powers from the start, don't expect me to follow that rule."

"Tsk, Tsk, it looks like your brain is smaller than a dog; actually saying you have a dog's brain is very offensive for the dog itself. After all, at least dogs are loyal," Victor said while pointing to a local.

Luan followed Victor's finger, and the moment Luan saw a man with blond hair and green eyes standing in the stands, he froze:

Corneliu made a gesture with his mouth, and Luan seemed to understand what Corneliu had said.

"Looks like the dog found its owner." Victor flashed a sneer.

"And? What will you do?" Victor asked as he smiled again.

"Are you going to obey your owner or are you going to continue? Decide! How good a dog are you, make up your own mind! Choose!" His smile grew with every word he spoke, he wanted Luan to continue, he wanted Luan to show that he wasn't a dog and challenge him.

Seeing the gestures his master was making, Luan bites his lip and says, "I give up," he spoke out loud, his voice seemed to be heard across the court, and everyone was looking at the basketball team captain in shock.

Suddenly Victor's smile died, and he lost interest, "Is that it? In the end, you're just a dog."

"Referee, you heard him, right. The captain dropped out, the show is over," Victor said as he took off his shirt and threw it somewhere.

Victor didn't wait for the referee to say something, he had lost interest, and he also fulfilled two of his goals. He humiliated Luan in front of the whole school he fought so hard to be accepted in and found out who was behind him; for now, that's enough.

When the women saw Victor's body, they started talking to each other.

"My God, look at his body."

"He is so hot."

"Does he have a girlfriend?"

"Actually, who is he?" A woman asked confused.

Victor flashed a sneer, he looked at the women in the stands and thought; I'm married, witches. He didn't even set eyes on these

women.

Ruby, who hid again when she noticed that Victor turned to the bleachers, got up and looked at Victor who was leaving; why do I keep hiding? Not even she knew why she was acting like this, she was just too embarrassed...

Ruby then looks at Corneliu, and sees the kind of face he was making; Yes, he will definitely attack Victor, I have to tell Violet... Actually, I think I should just tell him myself, but... I'm embarrassed! I can't go out there and say, hey, Victor. I'm your wife, good morning... Just thinking about it makes me feel ashamed! Yes, I will definitely contact Violet... Maybe I will contact him myself? Ahhhhhh!! My head!!!

Even though Ruby was going through a mental breakdown, her face didn't change, she still had an expressionless face as she watched Victor walk off the court.

## Chapter 10: A frog in a well.

After the conflict I had with Luan, I lost interest in continuing college that day. I wasn't satisfied with just doing that to Luan, this 1-year grudge can't be washed away with just that, but I knew I would have my chance soon, and I could deduce it from the hateful face that noble vampire was making.

He wasn't even trying to hide his hatred for me, and honestly, I didn't understand why he hated me so much. After all, I only hit his dog, right? Noble vampires seem to be beings with egos the size of the world, I doubt he would be enraged by just that, right?

Before returning home I purposely waited for the noble vampire in an open dark place, I know vampires can't walk in sunlight but if he was in college at that time then he must have ways to walk while the sun is shining in the sky, right? He might have some car that doesn't let sunlight in, or he might wear those clothes that cover his entire body.

I waited for a few minutes, but when I realized he wasn't going to come, I lost interest. Before leaving the place where I was standing, I used my vampire vision to look around, and I didn't see any vampire souls, I only saw humans for several KM.

Realizing that everything was fine, I returned home.

...

"You fool! What were you thinking showing off in the middle of the entire university!?" Corneliu Funar yelled angrily as he hit the desk in the office he was at. Because of his supernatural strength, the desk he hit had his handprint carved into the wood; a few seconds before hitting the table, he managed to regain enough control to not destroy his table again.

Corneliu was acting as a coach at this college, despite being a coach, he didn't teach the students anything, he was only in charge of managing the basketball team, but that was just on paper.

The reality was he wasn't doing anything, he was abusing his vampiric charm to stay in this school in an attempt to win the heart of Ruby, one of the four flowers of the vampire world.

Luan at this point was very scared; he might act like a king in college, but he knows that in front of the vampire who gave him his gifts, he was nothing more than a slave.

Luan knows that noble vampires are arrogant beings, they think the world revolves around them and they have a planet-sized egos, but that ego is as fragile as glass.

At least, that's what Luan thinks of noble vampires. After all, he's only been in contact with a single noble vampire since he became a newborn.

Luan looks at his master, Corneliu Funar, heir house Funar, a spoiled vampire who thinks he's the center of the world. Luan still remembers the day he was in a hospital bed and a young man who looked like a fairytale prince showed up to help him, he felt he was chosen to be that prince's knight, but the reality was much more difficult than he imagined.

This prince was nothing more than a spoiled vampire, but as he helped him out of that deplorable condition, he still feels gratitude to his master.

"You have nothing to say!?" Corneliu yelled angrily.

Luan remained silent, he knows that no matter what he says, he will suffer the punishment anyway. After suffering from it for a year, he's already used to it; torture is something very light when you get used to it. 'As long as my master is not touching my family, for me, a little torture is nothing'.

"Tsk" Corneliu ignores Luan and starts biting his fingers as he starts to think, this was a habit he had had since he was a child.

A few minutes later, Corneliu thought of something, he looked at Luan: "I'll save your punishment for later, but first, we must kill that newborn."

Corneliu changed his aim, he thought that if he killed Victor he would be free to court Violet. Now that he knew Violet was in this town, he thought of it as an opportunity.

Luan opens his eyes wide: "W-Why? Why should we kill him?" He stuttered. Despite being a vampire for over a year, Luan still hadn't killed a soul, he always drank his master's blood after all.

"Are you questioning me? If I say do something, you do it. Don't forget your position here." Corneliu spoke with a distorted face.

"Y-Yes, Master..." Luan stammered.

Corneliu nodded in satisfaction, he sits down in the chair and starts to get annoyed when he thinks a newborn has stolen one of the flowers of the vampire world.

Violet had always been an object of desire for all young noble vampires, a beautiful vampire with one of the rarest bloodlines in the vampire world. He couldn't accept that a humble newborn had decided to steal his most prized possession.

"Just wait, you little slave, I'm going to make you dog food," Corneliu spoke in a vicious tone.

...

February 3rd.

I'll be honest, I didn't expect Violet to make a huge basement in my house. I mean I live in a normal American house, and I also have a small basement, but what I'm seeing right now is just bullshit!

My old normal basement that you can see in many American houses now looks like a cave that has lots of tunnels and rooms, what did she transform this basement into? This looks like an underground base that came out of some movie, don't tell me she installed an artificial intelligence named Blue Queen too?

A better question, how did she do it so fast!?

"Hmm, is it okay to make a basement this size here at home?"

"Yes, why not?" Violet asked me, curious. She was wearing casual clothes this time, a simple white sweatshirt and black denim shorts, she was also wearing purple sports shoes with the symbol of a famous sports brand.

I was a little surprised by the outfits she picked out, I thought she only had black-colored outfits or something, or cosplay-like outfits. Well, she looks beautiful in those clothes, and I'm not complaining.

Seeing me watching her, she displays a small satisfied smile.

"I mean, isn't my house going to fall down or something with a hole this size?" I'm not very knowledgeable in physics, but I think if I create a hole this big under the house, won't the house fall down? I think that is how it works?

"Oh, don't worry about it." Violet claps her hands lightly, and soon I feel someone approaching; I use my vampire vision and see that person is a human.

The characteristics of a vampire are very easy to identify, but I always use my vampiric vision to make sure. After all, some humans look like vampires when they are afflicted by some kind of illness, like the one I had.

This woman was human, but she looked a little different from the normal humans I've seen... I could see her heart glowing as if inviting

me to feed on her, but the blue aura that surrounded the woman and the heart that she seemed to glow brighter than an ordinary human I saw told me she wasn't a normal human.

A woman with western features appeared, she had short black hair and golden eyes, she was wearing a casual outfit consisting of a white shirt with a beach photo stamped on her chest, simple denim shorts, and a basic pair of sandals. She looked a little short, I think it was 155CM? Or 160CM?

She looked a little shorter than Kaguya.

"Darling, meet June, and June meet my husband, Victor," Violet said as she hugged my arms possessively.

"Yo," She said while making a 'V' gesture with her fingers, then she said:

"Can you stop looking at me with those red eyes? I'm feeling a little threatened..." She spoke with a happy smile on her face. By her excited tone of voice, and expression that looked like she was having fun, I honestly didn't believe she felt threatened at all.

I close my eyes for a moment, and soon my vision returns to normal, I look at her with my sapphire blue eyes, and say, "Sorry about that, it's a bad habit of mine" I said.

"Don't worry, don't worry" She said while smiling.

"Lady Violet, I did my job and I want my payment, you can deposit it in my account with the same amount as always"

"I know, a million dollars, right?" Violet spoke casually.

I almost choked when I heard the amount of money, just how much money does my wife have to go throwing around a million dollars like it's a dollar bill?

"Yes, Yes, Indeed," June spoke while shaking her head, she

makes a few gestures with her hands, and soon the basement began to change, white ceramics began to grow on the floor, and several wooden coffins began to be created in the bedrooms. The walls began to turn a whiter color and I could see that bricks began to be created, and like a magic trick; The basement that once looked like a cave now looks like the interior of a mansion that has been painted in a black and white theme.

With my current knowledge, only one group of beings could do what this woman did: "Witches"

June displays a small satisfied smile, but soon that smile changes to a happy, joyful smile.

"Indeed. June is a witch I hired when I arrived in the US, as you can see, she has more useful and ... unique skills." Violet spoke with an elegant smile.

"If you have an order that cannot be legally placed, you can ask June, she will charge dearly but, since you are my husband, she will give a discount, right?" Violet spoke with an elegant smile as she looked at June who had her smile twitching slightly.

"Of course, Lady Violet," June said.

I looked at Violet, and I could deduce a little bit of what she was thinking, this princess was thinking how helpful it is to have a person who can literally create a structure with a hand gesture. I think she plans to keep June around, for a small moment, I almost felt sorry for June, but it was only for a moment, after all, I barely know June enough to feel any sympathy for her.

And, Violet seems to have a long history with this witch.

"Why did you create this basement-" I was going to ask Violet why she created this underground basement, but when I remember all the servants she had, I fell silent. "Nevermind"

Violet pouted, I think she wanted to explain to me in detail why she created this basement, I smile a little and start stroking her head.

For a moment, I feel Violet's body tremble like she's been shocked by electricity or something.

As I stroked Violet's head, I looked at the newly constructed basement; Of course, this is all very useful since, if Violet's underlings live here, they will be quite helpful in the future, but how the fuck am I going to explain this to my parents?

I've decided I'll keep it hidden from them, they can be weird and ignore my physical change, they can be weird enough and accept Violet as my wife easily, but this here? This is another level of bullshit I would have to invent to convince my parents.

Suddenly remembering the plans I had to earn money while walking through college, I looked at June.

"Just call me June," She said smiling.

"I need a fake ID, a fake bank account, preferably a tax haven bank account, I also need a fake SSN, can you arrange that for me?"

June looked at me confused, but soon she responded with a professional smile: "Oh? That's easy"

June picks up a phone and punches in some numbers, then she starts talking to someone, a few minutes later she looks at me: "Which fake name do you want?"

"Hmm. Name James Bon- Cough, James Smith." For a moment, I almost named a famous agent from the movies, I thought it would be cool, but when I started stealing in the future, it could get me into some issues. Copyrights. Believe me, copyright issues are very annoying, stealing is much easier than solving copyright issues.

She nodded, a few minutes passed again, and I could feel Violet's

breathing start to get more erratic, she was looking at me with glowing red eyes. She looked like she was going to jump on me at any moment.

For a moment, I looked at my hand; do I have a god hand? Why is she reacting like this just by me stroking her head?

As I looked at my hand as if it were Midas' right hand.

June just spoke on the phone, and soon she summons two documents, the first document is a fake ID card that has my fake SSN on it, and the other is my bank account, I look at the bank account document and I see the document is from a bank account in a tax-free country.

The wonders of a tax haven!

"You are very efficient, are all witches like this?" I asked genuinely surprised.

"This information is going to cost a little more, do you really want to know?" June spoke as her golden eyes sparkled a little, if this were an anime I'm sure her eyes would turn into the dollar sign by now.

"Forget what I said," I reply.

"Tsk, too bad," She pouted.

She's really greedy, huh? Well, at least she's honest.

Violet suddenly looks at June with her blood red eyes: "Leave" She spoke as the teeth began to change into sharp teeth that could tear flesh easily.

June felt a shiver run down her spine as she looked into Violet's eyes. "Cough, I remembered that I had to feed my cat in Hawaii, take care! Lord Husband, soon I will be back to collect money for my services, seeya!"

June makes a few gestures with her hands, and suddenly a magic circle appears on the ground, and she disappears.

When June leaves, I suddenly feel an explosion of bloodlust coming from Violet.

I display a small smile and I also let my desire out, I wanted her! I wanted her blood!

"Let's have fun~ Darling" Violet spoke with a huge smile that showed all of her teeth.

## Chapter 11: Obsession... And The Perfect Maid.

Violet suddenly jumps on top of me. I quickly caught her in my arms, she wraps her legs around my waist, and I hold her by her soft ass; I look up a little bit and stare into her blood-red eyes.

"Darling~! Darling~! Darling~!" She looked like she was going crazy, she had a huge smile on her face, the skin on her cheeks was a little red and she was breathing erratically as she hugged me.

Feeling the bloodlust that is emanating from Violet's body, I too start to loosen the shackles that keep me under control, my teeth start to shift and a predatory smile appears on my face.

Seeing my smile and realizing that I was accepting her advances, Violet's smile grows erratically. Slowly her teeth start to change into sharp fangs, but she doesn't attack me right away, She starts sniffing me, and breathing erratically as if out of breath, she brings her face close to my neck, starts licking my neck with her tongue and, when my neck is wet enough, she opens her mouth and then bites me!

"Ugh~!" I feel my blood being drained, I also feel an unnatural surge of pleasure enter my body, this feeling was very addictive.

I push Violet into the wall, I hear the sound of the wall cracking, but I don't care, I also open my mouth, and soon I bite her neck too!

"Ahh~~!" She stops sucking my blood and moans sensually as remnants of my blood that she sucked and didn't have time to swallow start to fall from her sharp fangs, I feel my shirt being smeared with the blood but I don't care.

I feel something 'wake up' and it was like a vampire who can't see the sunlight opening the lid of his coffin; it also feels like he was rubbing on Violet's coffin, wanting to wake her up from her sleep for

them to have fun tonight. Wonderful.

Violet starts licking my neck again as her coffin starts to shake as the vampire wakes up. Unfortunately, I couldn't directly feel the real deal, but that's a problem that can be solved easily.

When I was going to rip my clothes off with my right arm, I sensed a horrible stench coming from an area near my house, it was like someone opening the sewer in my street.

Violet seems to smell it too, and I see all the bloodlust and her excitement has faded and been replaced by annoyance.

I get annoyed too, that would be an understatement to say how upset I was. My feeling now was like I was about to eat a delicious meal with my wife, but suddenly the sewer in the street broke, and the place we were eating stank with a terrible odor.

I stop sucking her blood and look up using my vampire vision, I see two silhouettes at a considerable distance from my house, I see two men together.

They were both human, but just like June, they had an aura covering them as if it was protecting them. But, unlike June whose aura was blue, these individuals' auras were golden, and I was smelling a horrible stench coming from them.

Hearing someone's teeth grind, I look over at Violet and see that she has a rather startling expression on her face, her face was distorted in anger; she was completely pissed off.

"Those fuckers! They just had to come and interrupt my moment with my husband, those mother fuckers! They just can't sit in their church and be quiet while they play with the kids they love so much!? Those mangy dogs! Pieces of shit!"

I just opened my eyes in surprise as I saw Violet's face distort into various expressions of disgust and anger as she spoke words that

would make the most experienced sailors proud.

I bring my face closer to Violet's neck and start licking the blood off her neck.

Upon feeling me lick her neck, she stops insulting the people I assume are from The Inquisition and moans a little. "Ahh~".

I feel her gaze on my neck and she soon starts licking me too, as I licked her I said, "Calm down, and think clearly, I sincerely doubt these agents are here looking for us."

"Ahh~~!" She moans again this time a little louder, and while breathing a little harder, she says, "The agents of The Inquisition, Ugh~" She bites her lip a little and wraps her legs tighter around my waist.

I start to lightly pat her ass while licking her neck and blowing a little in her ears:

"Wait~! Ahhhh~!! I can't form a coherent train of thought while~" I feel like liquids have started to leak from her sacred coffin, and wet the shorts she was wearing.

"Darling~, Ugh~, Wait!" She spoke the last word in a strong tone.

I stop my caresses and look at her face which was a flushed mess, her breathing was erratic, and she was looking at me with desire burning in her eyes: "...Are you calmer?" I spoke while trying to ignore my impulses.

"...Yes~..." She replied as she tried to catch her breath.

She pushes me away from her and claps her hands in a 'let me down' gesture, I nod my head and let go, then I too step away from her and look at the visitors.

Cough! Cough!

She coughed a few times, and soon she had a noble look again; that look would be more convincing if her shorts weren't wet and her face wasn't a flushed mess.

"What was I really talking about?" She asked out loud with a confused face.

I can't help but laugh a little when I see the face she was making.

"What?" She said looking at me while pouting.

"I was thinking how adorable my wife is"

Hearing what I said, I could see her pale skin starting to turn a healthy red, she made a "Humpf" sound and turned her face away while she had a happy smile.

She is so adorable my god! How can such a lovely creature exist?

Before my wife and I fell into our pink world again, I said, "The Inquisition?"

She looks at me confused: "The Inquisition? What about them?"

I just look at her with an expressionless face, don't tell me she already forgot? I look up and see they're walking like they're looking for something, one of them is also holding something in his hands that I don't know what it is. At least they've stopped stinking a little bit.

"Oh, those bastards, huh?" She spoke when she sniffed the air and smelled the stench, her face grimaced with disgust, and then she continued:

"The Inquisition agents are probably patrolling, they have a device capable of tracking vampires. This device is useless when they are hunting noble vampires, but for hunting common vampires without support, this device is very useful."

"Why is this device useless for the nobles?" I asked, curious.

"Noble vampires are the only vampires who can pay witches to do countermeasures for this type of technology." She spoke, and then she continued: "Of course there are exceptions, there are ordinary vampires who have been transformed and have a lot of accumulated wealth. After all, this is the united states, the country of capitalism, there are several plebeian vampires with a lot of money here"

"These agents who are patrolling must be recruits since an experienced agent has his own means of investigating the presence of a vampire in the region."

"Just out of curiosity, how much does this countermeasure cost?" I asked, curious.

"Hmm, depending on the witch you contact, the value could reach 5 billion dollars"

I open my eyes in shock: "...Isn't this too inflated!?"

"That's what happens when a product is monopolized... Witches are the only ones who have this technology, they can put whatever price they want on it, that's why noble vampires always invest in maintaining friendly relations with witches." Violet said as she walked to one of the bedrooms, "I'm going to change clothes," she straightens her hair that was messed up, and then she started to take off the sweatshirt she was wearing and was just in a black bra, after that she started to take off the jean shorts she was wearing and was left with only black panties, I decided to follow her towards the bedroom of course.

When I go towards the room, Kaguya appears from my shadow and holds my shoulders with her hand.

"What are you doing, Kaguya?" I couldn't help but ask in a neutral tone.

"Lord Victor, please don't be a degenerate now. You have all eternity to feast on each other's lusts, you have all the time in the

world to practice the act of reproduction. You might even decide to make eleven babies in the future to compete in the world cup, but now is not the time for that"

I feel my eyes twitch a little when I hear Kaguya's words, can't this woman speak in a better way? And why the hell does she think I would make eleven babies just to play in the world cup!? Shouldn't vampires be hard to get pregnant or something?

"Please join me, Lord Victor," Kaguya said as she pointed to the room beside Violet.

I think for a few seconds about my decision. I know that Kaguya won't stop me again from entering Violet's room. I also know if I enter Violet's room now, and I see my wife as she came into the world, I'm going to get excited again, and start teasing my wife.

On the one hand, I want to go into my wife's room right now, but this horrible stench that seems like the stench of a sewer lowers my spirits... Tsk, first let's solve this little problem, I can't be horny now.

I decide to follow Kaguya's suggestion and walk towards the room next to Violet, I enter the room and see that there is a change of new clothes on the bed.

"Lord Victor, do you want help changing?" Kaguya asked while gesturing with her hand, she was looking at me with an expressionless face, but I could see her eyes shining. I swear I saw her doing an expression of 'please accept, I'm a trustworthy maid'.

... I'll be honest, I was a little curious how she was going to change my clothes so, like a good adventurer, I said, "Of course, help me change my clothes."

When I spoke those words, Kaguya's eyes changed to blood red, and I could see her eyes light up as if she was excited then she displayed a small satisfied smile. "As expected from Lord Victor; Lady Violet has chosen a good husband"

Before I can understand anything, she ... disappeared into shadows and passed through my body? I noticed that the clothes that were on the bed disappeared and, without me understanding anything that happened, Kaguya was standing in front of me again holding the clothes I was wearing. The clothes I was wearing were even folded! It all happened so fast I could barely understand what happened.

I look down at my chest and realize I was already dressed. "... This is impressive..." I comment surprised. I was talking about her speed, and how she changed my clothes without me feeling her touch on my body...

She holds her hand to her chest as a gesture of respect and speaks with an expressionless face, but I can tell she was proud, "I am the strongest and most perfect maid, of course, this would be a natural result."

"Heh," I display a small smile, somehow I find her adorable, I approach her and start stroking her head.

She lifts her expressionless face a little and looks at me, I could see her eyes light up a little, she looked excited: "Lord Victor, please keep your hands off the maids. Within just one day, are you already cheating on your wife?"

My smile threatens to break when I hear what Kaguya says: "Is it not the maid's duty to serve her master?" I spoke with a small smile.

"So, you are abusing your authority." She spoke with the same expressionless face. "I understand, as it's the master's order, I can't do anything. After all, the master's orders are absolute and, as I am a perfect maid and the eldest of my sisters, I must be the one to sacrifice myself so that you don't lay your hands on the younger maids." She spoke as if she were making a great sacrifice.

This maid, she's read a lot of erotic books... I stop stroking her head and tug at both her plump cheeks.

"Lord Victor~, I'm not a masochist~, I don't like pain, please stop~"

"Stop your delusions, maid." I let go of her cheek, when she lowered her head and touched her cheeks which I pulled, I stroked her head lightly and said:

"Good job Kaguya," I said gratefully, I really liked this maid's personality. I feel Kaguya tremble a little when I said those words, I think she didn't like what I said? I look down, but I just see Kaguya's black hair.

I stopped petting Kaguya and left the room, as I walk towards the stairs that lead to my house, I decided to wait for Violet upstairs. After all, I just heard my parents' voices, I think they came home.

When Victor left the room, Violet who was wearing a different outfit appeared in the room Victor was in and looked at Kaguya who had a shocked expression.

"Kaguya" Violet speaks.

Kaguya awakens from stupor and assumes a blank expression.

"Yes, Lady Violet?"

Violet's eyes changed to blood red and she spoke in an emotionless tone, "He's mine... He's only mine!" She spoke in an obsessive tone.

"I know, Lady Violet, I was just surprised, it won't happen again."

"Good" Violet's eyes return to their normal color and she smiles contentedly, Violet turns and starts walking towards the stairs.

"Lady Violet" Kaguya calls out.

Violet stops walking.

"What do you intend to do about Lady Sasha and Lady Ruby?" Violet heard Kaguya say.

Violet's body starts to shake, she clenches her fists tightly and the air around Violet starts to heat up. If a normal human saw Violet's face at this point, they would just run away in fear.

Her face was distorted in anger, her eyes were glowing with a dangerous glint, and all her sharp teeth were showing. She didn't look like a noblewoman, she looked like a monster that was hateful enough to burn the world.

Realizing that Violet was losing control again, Kaguya takes a small green ball from her pocket and breaks it, then she spoke in a neutral tone, "June."

"I know! I know!" June who was wearing a green bikini appears in a magic circle and, with a snap of her fingers, she insulated the entire basement she created with a sound isolation barrier. She made sure that any sound could not be heard outside the door or on the surface, she also reinforces the walls with her magic power.

No longer able to take the feeling she was holding, Violet punches the wall: "Those bitches!"

Boooom!

The wall breaks in the shape of a spider's web.

"She has an absurd strength as always, and it looks like she's stronger?" June spoke in a calm tone as if this happened often, but she was a little surprised that Violet was getting stronger.

"He is just mine! Just mine! I will not allow any woman near him! I will kill those whores!"

A bloody pressure began to spread throughout the basement, realizing that Violet was raging uncontrollably and not returning to

normal, Kaguya says:

"Lady Violet... The two women are your childhood friends..."

Hearing Kaguya's words, the atmosphere around Violet weakened considerably, but the sense of danger was still present.

Violet clenches her fists tightly, and bites her lip in frustration; it's like she's having an internal battle, but soon her obsession with Victor seems to win.

Violet spoke in a tone devoid of emotions: "I know...I know...I know...That's why I don't want Victor to meet them, I don't want to have to kill my friends from childhood." Soon she began to control her powers and the atmosphere returned to normal as if nothing had happened.

June makes a gesture with her hands and soon the barrier she put in place disappears: "As always, the same amount of money in the same bank account. I'll charge a little more also for the teleportation tools, these things aren't cheap, and please don't call me suddenly, I was in Hawaii enjoying the beach, you know? Tsk, Tsk, Seeya." She spoke as she threw three more green balls to Kaguya who took them and put them in her pocket.

From beginning to end, Kaguya just looked at June like she was looking at a piece of trash, but in the end, she nodded her head in agreement with June's requests. The witch's services were cheaper compared to other witches who she knew, so spending a little money to prevent Violet from screwing it up is a small price to pay in Kaguya's view.

Natalia the blonde maid appears from a hidden door, she came here through the secret passages June made in the basement. She was just having tea in one of the hidden rooms in this basement, but she decided to come here when she saw the noise Violet was making.

"What do you intend to do?" Natalia asked.

Kaguya sighed and said:

"As the perfect maid, I cannot let Lady Violet make a mistake that she will regret in the future. After all, the maid must always want the best for her master..." She spoke in a neutral tone, then she continued:

"Lady Violet is not taking the whole situation calmly, her obsession with Victor is clouding her judgment... The ritual is absolute, all three women must join Lord Victor, because if they don't Lord Victor may fall into a deep sleep, and the two women could also join him..."

If that happens, Lady Violet will go mad... Kaguya can't help but think inwardly.

"Sigh, this whole situation is complicated, especially considering this has never happened before." Natalia spoke in a neutral tone with a small sigh.

Kaguya nods, and soon she makes a decision: "I'll get in touch with Lady Ruby and Lady Sasha."

Natalia the blonde maid who was wearing a French maid uniform said, "Be careful with the church dogs when you go out."

Kaguya nods and disappears into the darkness.

## Chapter 12: A hard-working maid.

On the rooftop of a twenty-story building was a maid with short black hair looking in the direction of a particular university, the university she was looking at was the same university Victor attended.

Despite being several kilometers away, Kaguya could see the college as if it were very close.

As she watched college, Kaguya began to think about what had happened in the past two days.

Kaguya wouldn't lie to herself, she was a little surprised at Violet's new husband.

"At first, I thought he would run away when he saw my master's psychotic attitude," Kaguya commented to herself, after all, she knew Violet's personality well.

Kaguya was a new vampire by vampire standards, she was only 210 years old.

Since she became self-aware she has always been trained to be the personal servant of the Snow Clan leader or heir.

Kaguya is part of Clan Blank, a subsidiary family of Clan Snow, the two families have a blood bond that cannot be broken because Clan Blank's ancestor was one of the main members of Clan Snow who fell in love with a Japanese noble vampire. That is a story that happened over 1000 years in the past.

It is because of this ancestor that Clan Blank has some Japanese characteristics, Kaguya herself is a perfect example.

Kaguya did not inherit the Snow Clan's flames, but she did inherit Snow Clan's immunity to the sun, and because of that immunity,

Kaguya had to serve Clan Snow.

Normally, it shouldn't be like that, after all, Kaguya's ancestor was part of Clan Snow's main house, and he married a noble Japanese Vampire who could control the shadows. But, because of the untimely death of Kaguya's ancestor's wife, the descendants of the noble vampire were left without political support and, because of that, they were demoted to a subsidiary family that exists only to serve the Snow Clan.

What about Kaguya's ancestor? He didn't care. The moment he found out his wife died, he disappeared and left his children in the care of Clan Snow. For Kaguya, this was really a tedious story, a story from a second-rate movie; because of a vampire's decision, an entire bloodline was doomed to live eternally serving a Clan.

"Nice job, huh?" Kaguya thought aloud with a small smile on her face.

Kaguya had always wanted to be the 'perfect' maid since she was a little girl, in a way she was just doing it to be praised, it was like a child who was trying to get the attention of her parents, but her efforts were never recognized...

When Victor said 'good job', for a moment, she remembered her childhood; just for a moment, she felt happy.

But it's not all flowers, reality soon hit her when Violet called out to her. Kaguya exhibited a small disdainful smile: "Heh, I think, in the end, the stalker found a good man, maybe I should work a little harder."

Kaguya had a secret... a secret of her own. At first, she didn't like Violet... Wrong, she didn't like the Snow Clan's heir. She didn't like to feel trapped by the duty that was placed on her from birth; she liked being a servant, but she didn't like to feel attached to someone.

"The perfect maid can freely choose the master she wants to

serve... Unfortunately, I'm far from being the perfect maid." Kaguya spoke with a shrug as she made a bored gesture as if she had no choices.

But soon she assumes her blank expression: "But as Lady Violet's personal maid I can't let her make a mistake she'll regret in the future. After all, I can't be a perfect maid, but at least I am a hardworking one." She chuckled a little to herself, and soon she jumped in the opposite direction to the university that Victor studied.

...

"You guys really went to buy... I thought you were kidding" I said, surprised and a little disbelieving what I was seeing in front of me. I was looking at my mom and dad who bought several boxes of fireworks.

"Why do you have that dead fish face?" She asked me, and then she still doesn't give me time to answer anything: "Oh, you always have that look on your face, I'm sorry... Anyway! We have to celebrate! You have no idea how much I wanted a daughter-in-law so I could cuddle and cuddle!" My mother spoke with a smug face.

'Why are you treating my wife like she's your daughter!?' I can't help but comment internally.

Suddenly my mother ran towards the kitchen, and started looking for someone; she looked like a child who acquired a new friend and wanted to play.

When she saw Violet who was looking into the kitchen like she was looking at her archenemy, she ignored Violet's expression and hugged her!

Violet makes a surprised expression, but soon she smiles softly and turned to look at my mom, "Lady Anna, what are you doing?"

"Wrong, wrong. Wrong, wrong." She spoke the same word over

and over while shaking her head. "You are my son's wife, so you must call me Mom!"

Violet looked shocked at my mother.

Violet was a tall woman, she was 180 CM tall, compared to my mom who was 170 CM tall, so from my perspective seeing my mom hugging Violet, was a bit comical. She looked more like a younger sister to Violet than my mother.

"...Mother...?" Violet spoke with a difficult expression, it was like a person who had never spoken those words before in her life.

"Umu, Umu," My mom breaks away from Violet and nods with a satisfied expression. "That still wasn't enough but I realize you're uncomfortable, so I won't force you into anything."

"It's not that... It's just..." Violet was going to say something, but she was silent; it seems she must have some family issues.

"Shh, don't worry, everyone on this planet has secrets, even my son and his wife." My mom spoke with a meaningful smile.

Violet smiled a little with a grateful expression.

"But anyway, why were you looking at the kitchen like it was your archenemy?" My mom asked curiously and, as always, she was brutally honest.

Violet's expression takes on several shades of red, she ducks her head in embarrassment and pouts, "I...I was never good in the kitchen, and...and I wanted to make Victor something to eat."

Mom and I looked at Violet in shock.

Suddenly my mom starts hugging Violet tighter: "Kyaaaa!!! You are so beautiful my god!! My son hit jackpot!"

Violet's face is completely red and she looks to me for help, but I

just shrug like it has nothing to do with me.

She suddenly takes on an expression of someone who has been left to survive alone in the wild, sorry my wife but I want you to be my sacrifice to my mother.

And, looking at the small smile on Violet's face, I can see that she's not disliking my mom's attitude; she's just a woman who isn't honest with her feelings (although she's surprisingly honest when it comes to me).

"I decided!" My mom suddenly stops hugging Violet and yells, then she continues, "I'm going to teach you how to cook!"

When I heard my mom's words I couldn't help but wonder about the doubt I had when I heard Violet was bad at cooking, can vampires eat regular food?

"Really?" Violet asked with bright eyes.

"Of course, let's go!" Suddenly my mother pulls Violet by the arm and leads her into the kitchen, soon the two women start talking.

"You found a good wife," my dad said as he was leaning against the wall with his arms crossed.

I look at him, and see him smiling at me with a satisfied face.

I display a small smile, "You're wrong, dad."

"Hmm?" My dad looks at me confused.

"I didn't find her, she found me," I said.

"...Women these days are more honest with their feelings, huh?" He spoke with a small smile, then he crouches down and tries to pick up the boxes full of fireworks.

"Leave it to me, dad," I said as I walked over and placed all the

boxes piled on my shoulder, in total they bought three boxes the size of a normal microwave.

My father, seeing me putting all the boxes on my shoulder, couldn't help but smile at me satisfied: "Now you can work as a bricklayer; you used to be very weak"

Oof, I felt like someone had stabbed my heart with a stake. I look at my dad and think 'he's really going to ignore the changes in my body, huh? Or maybe he doesn't care?'

Anyway, I appreciate that he's not asking anything.

As I carried the boxes into the living room, I asked my father, "By the way, what took you so long?" After all, it's already turned into night.

I seem to speak loud enough for my mom to hear because she stops talking to Violet and looks at me, "We wanted to give you guys privacy, after all, you guys are supposed to be horny with each other, right? "

"Mother!?" I looked at her in shock, Woman control your mouth!

"I know this is normal, you two are young, etc." My mom spoke in a bored tone like it was no big deal.

"Indeed, we enjoyed last night," Violet spoke with a smile on her face, she was saying that last night we sucked each other's blood but that only increased the misunderstanding.

My mom looks at Violet with shining eyes, "Looks like I'm going to like you even more than I already do! I found a partner!"

"partner?" Violet questions confused.

"Yes, do you know how difficult it is to be the only honest person in this house? My son is an antisocial man that if it weren't for my teachings, would have become a simp to some successful streamer."

Woman, why do you know these useless things!? I thought as I placed the boxes in the room.

"Oh?" Violet looks at me and I turn away, ignoring her. After all, there are some truths to my mom's words. I wouldn't become a simp because I didn't have money and I wasn't foolish enough to believe that if I gave these streamers some money, I could get in their pants. Besides, I didn't even have time to think about it because I was worried about my health and, in the past, I looked like a thin undead; I doubt any woman would be interested in me.

"And my husband...well, he's my husband..." She spoke in a flat tone, it was like she didn't have much to say about my father.

Well, in general, my father is a good father, he never missed anything at home and he was always there when we needed him.

"Hey, woman! Don't dirty my image in front of my daughter-in-law!" my father yelled.

My mom just sticks her tongue out to my dad.

Suddenly I smell the sewer stink again, those agents must have returned.

Honestly, I didn't have a problem with these agents, they were just doing their job but, for some reason, they stank like a sewer and that annoyed me.

I'm just annoyed by the fact that I was having a good 'normal' conversation with my family and suddenly someone seems to have opened the sewer in the middle of our house, it was just an irritating feeling.

"Honey, should we get your things?" I spoke out loud when I noticed Violet was starting to show her 'gentle' face. I didn't want her to show this face to my parents. Although I think it's adorable, I don't

know if my parents would like it and that was a gamble I didn't want to make (and I'm self-conscious enough to realize that her face is scary for normal people... even though that expression is so adorable).

Hearing my voice, Violet controls her expression and smiles gently, "You're right darling."

My mom makes a sad expression, "Ehh? But we were having fun..." She spoke while pouting.

"Don't worry... Mother." She paused and spoke the last word with a hard face, she clearly wasn't used to saying that word, soon that expression fades into a kind face, "I live near here, and I just need to get some more clothes."

"I see... Well, take care and come back soon" She spoke with a gentle smile.

"I'll be right back mother," Violet said, she looked like she could say the last word a little easier now, she walked towards the door.

"I'll be right back, Mister Leon," Violet said in a polite tone.

"Just call me Leon," My dad said.

Violet nods her head smiling.

I look at my dad and say, "I'll be right back, dad."

My dad nodded and said, "Take care of yourself out there, son."

I nod my head indicating that I understand and then walk to the door, Violet holds my arm like a good wife and we walk out of the house.

When the door to the house closed, Victor and Violet suddenly disappeared.

## Chapter 13: Ruby Scarlett.

Ruby Scarlett's House.

A beautiful woman with long red hair and a body that would be the envy of any model was sleeping soundly in a very ordinary-looking King Size bed, she was sleeping in a very comfortable position, it seemed that nothing in this world could interrupt her sleep.

"Lady Ruby," Suddenly a woman's voice can be heard in the bedroom.

"Ugh~" Ruby gave a sign of life but continued to sleep. After all, she was fully convinced that no one would dare interrupt her sleep and she also knew that no one would dare attack her family and, because of that conviction, she could sleep as if she had no worries in the world.

"Lady Ruby,"

This time Ruby heard the woman's voice, but she was too lazy to get up. Though, for a moment, she thought this woman's voice was all too familiar.

Well, she was too lazy to think, so she decided to continue to sleep.

"Kaguya, you're doing it wrong," Suddenly Ruby hears her personal maid's voice.

"Oh? How do you wake up your master, Luna?" Kaguya asked in a neutral tone.

Luna flashes a sadistic smile and approaches Ruby then she says, "Ruby, I ripped up your entire personal anime collection."

Ruby suddenly opens her eyes and looks coldly at Luna, her personal maid.

"You won't fool me again, Luna," Ruby said in a cold tone.

"Eh? Tsk, looks like I have to find another way to provoke Lady Ruby." The maid spoke aloud with a pout.

Kaguya just looks at Luna with emotionless eyes. Luna was wearing a maid's uniform similar to Kaguya's, she has shoulder-length white hair, pale skin like all vampires, and pink eyes. She was a Russian woman with a height of 180 CM

Kaguya looks at a specific part of Luna; Huge as always, she thought disdainfully.

Luna's most outstanding feature was her huge breasts, just like Ruby who had the biggest breasts Kaguya has ever seen, Luna didn't seem to lose in this competition.

'Now that I've stopped to think about it, all the women of Lady Ruby's Clan have huge breasts,' Kaguya commented to herself.

"Ugh~, I wanted to sleep..." Ruby complained, she sat up in bed.

When Kaguya sees Ruby's breasts dangle in the red nightgown she was wearing, she can't help but think 'Maybe I should just let Lady Violet kill this woman?'

Ruby looks at the guest and says, "Oh, Kaguya... How long has it been since we have last seen each other," she said with a gentle smile.

Seeing Ruby's gentle smile, Kaguya stops thinking about random bullshit. She knows that of the three women who are childhood friends, Ruby is the kindest, calmest, and the smartest person she knows, she also has nothing against this woman. ..

Boing! Boing!

Yes, she has nothing against-...

Seeing Ruby's breasts bouncing as she stretches on the bed, Kaguya pulls back everything she thinks and decides it's a good idea to let this woman die.

"Kaguya~?" Ruby spoke as she stretched.

"Tsk," Kaguya didn't hide her annoyance, but soon her expression goes blank and she says: "I came here to talk about Lady Violet"

Ruby opens her eyes, a little surprised, but doesn't react too much, she expected something like this to happen. "You came at a good time, I have something to tell you too."

"Oh?" Kaguya looks at Ruby with curious eyes.

Soon Ruby starts explaining to Kaguya about the noble vampire Corneliu Funar.

...

When Ruby finishes recounting the events that happened at the university to Kaguya, the black-haired maid only speaks in disdain:

"A young noble vampire who thinks he's the center of the world and has an ego more fragile than glass? What is new?"

Ruby nodded in agreement with Kaguya's words, "But that's not the problem, what if Corneliu attacks him?"

"Oh? Oh?" Suddenly Luna, who was silent, started to smile.

"Lady Ruby won't call that man 'darling' like Lady Violet?"

Ruby turns to face Luna and says in a cold tone, "Silence."

Luna's body suddenly stops moving and she says, "Yes, Lady

Ruby," she spoke in a neutral tone like a robot.

"She doesn't learn, huh?" Kaguya spoke in a bored tone. Since the moment she met Luna, this woman has always liked to tease Ruby. Ruby is a kind person and doesn't like to use 'master' status to force Luna to do things, but Luna knows no limits; she likes to tease Ruby in any situation. That's inappropriate behavior for a servant, after all, the servant cannot tarnish her master's reputation.

"Yes, I don't like to do that, but she doesn't know how to control her mouth." Ruby sighed.

Kaguya nods in agreement, but then she says, "About Corneliu; Lady Ruby, no need to worry"

"Why don't I need to worry?" Ruby asked confused.

"Because Lord Victor can handle it," Kaguya spoke in a neutral tone, but Ruby could see she was confident Victor could handle it.

"Huh? But, he's a newborn, and a newborn can't fight a noble vampire who's been roaming the world for over 50 years. Even though Corneliu is weak by noble vampire standards, he's still a noble vampire, a newborn vampire can't handle him." Ruby explained her reasoning.

Kaguya ignores Ruby's reasoning, and asks, "Lady Ruby, have you forgotten what we are?"

Ruby opens her eyes for a moment when she understands what Kaguya means.

Kaguya flashes a cold smile, "We are vampires. We are not like wolves that take care of each other, if Victor dies fighting Corneliu, that means he wasn't as special as Lady Violet always said."

"Indeed," Ruby said with a cold smile, but soon she continues with a gentle smile, "But I don't intend to become a widow before

meeting my husband"

"And as a perfect maid I can't let my master be sad, after all, a maid must always prioritize the best for her master," Kaguya commented with a small smile on her face.

"Looks like we've agreed on something," Ruby said with the same smile.

"Indeed," Kaguya agreed.

"But I didn't come here to talk about it." Kaguya suddenly changes the subject, "I came here to say that Lady Violet's possessive attitude has been getting out of hand since the moment she met Victor... And she will probably try to kill you without worrying about the consequences"

"I know..." Ruby commented with a sad smile. "I've known her since she was little, I know how crazy she can be when someone takes something that belongs to her, and honestly? I guess Sasha and I shouldn't have been there when Victor was turned. After all, he was someone Violet had always been watching since she was a child." Ruby puts her hand on her neck and suddenly her eyes change to blood red, a bloody atmosphere started coming out of Ruby's body, and slowly, it felt like Ruby's room was getting colder; it was like the temperature suddenly dropped into the negatives.

"But I don't intend to give up either, what happened in the ritual can't be undone and I can't go into hibernation because of a little mistake like that. I have a lot of things I want to do in the future yet... if Victor does become my darling, and when he becomes my darling, he'll have my full support for whatever he wants to do in the future."

Ruby's smile grew unnaturally, and her sharp teeth started to show. She was no longer a kind woman, she seems to have changed to something much worse in just a few days...

And, Kaguya noticed this change, outside Kaguya had the same

blank expression, but inside she couldn't help thinking 'For god's sake, another one? Does Lord Victor's blood have properties that turn female vampires into stalkers?'

"I understand, I'm leaving," Kaguya said when she turned around, she had fulfilled her goal.

Ruby seeing that Kaguya was leaving returned to her gentle appearance, "Are you going to visit Sasha?" she asked curiously.

"Yes," Kaguya said.

"Be careful with Sasha's new maid, she's... special," Ruby warned her.

"What happened to the former maid..." Kaguya asked as she turned and looked at Ruby and, seeing Ruby's sad look, she said, "She died...?"

"Yes... She was murdered by the dogs of the church," Ruby spoke in an angry and at the same time sad tone, she knew Sasha's maid, Julia. She always talked a lot to Julia when she went to visit Sasha.

"...I see," Kaguya spoke in a neutral tone, but Ruby could hear some sadness in her voice. Soon the shadows started to engulf Kaguya, and she disappeared.

Seeing that Kaguya is gone, Ruby looks at Luna then her eyes change to blood red for a moment, and soon Luna starts acting normally.

"Sorry about that again, Luna."

"It's okay, I know I go overboard sometimes," Luna commented with a small smile on her face.

"Sometimes?" Ruby raised an eyebrow.

"..." Luna used her right to remain silent.

Ruby sighs and looks at her watch, seeing it was eight o'clock in the morning, she thinks 'it's still too early, my university starts in the afternoon and I'm too lazy to make arrangements to avoid sunlight when I go out...I think I'll just sleep again.'

Ruby lays on the bed and pulls her sheet to cover her body, the moment she lays down she feels thirsty, when she feels this craving for blood that can't be satiated by ordinary blood, she can't help cursing Violet 'that bitch, she's got her thirst quenched but she doesn't think about the consequences, does she want my darling to go into a coma?'

Ruby's eyes kept changing red and green, she was trying to resist the bloodlust.

"Lady Ruby..." Luna spoke worriedly.

"It's okay, Luna. Soon this problem will cease to exist," Ruby spoke while still lying down, as soon as she covers the sheet up to her head she closes her eyes. She was trying to sleep while ignoring her bloodlust which seems to be increasing with each passing day.

Luna looks at Ruby worriedly, she can't help but think inwardly 'that's bad, if it goes on like this Lady Ruby could lose control or go into a sleep state... I need to do something.'

Luna was thinking about what she could do to help Ruby, but she couldn't find any ideas in her head when, suddenly, she has a brilliant idea 'I'm going to get in touch with Ruby's mom!'

...

Two tall men were walking down the street as they were looking around. They were wearing two full black priest's robes, but unlike normal priest's clothes, these men's clothes were designed for combat and easy movement. Around these men's necks, a small white crucifix

can be seen.

The two men appeared to have Western features, one had dark black hair and brown eyes, the other had light brown hair and black eyes.

While the black-haired man had a simple cut, the brown-haired man had a bowl-shaped haircut.

"Thomas, what are we doing? We've been down this street about five hundred times! For the love of our father, let's get out of here!" The brown-haired man spoke impatiently.

"Shut up, Dick-Head! I feel those evil creatures around here, I smell the stink!" Thomas the black-haired man spoke with conviction.

When the brown-haired man hears what Thomas said, he is furious: "Don't call me Dick-Head! I have a name that God gave me! My name is-"

"Yes, Yes, whatever. Come on Dick-Head, the equipment is feeling something over there," Thomas said as he pointed to a street.

"HEY!! Do not ignore me!! And we've been down this street before!!" Dick-Head spoke.

"Strange, this is state-of-the-art equipment, is it defective?" Thomas spoke as he looked at the device in his hand, the device was shaped like a wooden crucifix.

Dick-Head approaches Thomas and looks at the equipment, he suddenly gets angrier: "This is not state-of-the-art equipment! This equipment was used during the hunting of vampires in the 18th century! For the love of God! Where did you get this!?"

"Huh? I got it from the church warehouse, it said equipment for tracking vampires!"

"...Did you look at which version of the equipment?"

Thomas turns his face away: "...Yes..."

Veins start popping in Dick-Head's head. "You're an idiot!"

"Are these the famous hunters from The Inquisition...?" Victor who was watching these two hunters on top of a house asked as he looked at Violet who was standing next to him.

Violet turns her face away, and replies: "...Yes"

"Are you sure?" Victor looked at the two priests again and then looked at Violet who was ignoring him.

"...Yes...I guess..." Violet replied uncertainly.

Victor looked at the two priests again, and seeing them argue again, "Are you absolutely sure they aren't two comedians dressed as priests?"

Violet looks at the priests again, seeing how she had no way to explain the attitude of those priests, she uses her right to remain silent, but internally she was thinking, 'I evacuated the humans from the surrounding area thinking there might be conflict, but it looks like I've done a useless job, these two hunters are still inexperienced... Does it look like they're on their first mission?' She thought.

Victor looks at Violet for a moment and ignores her, then he uses his vampire vision and looks at the priests. Seeing the golden energy covering those priests, and feeling a little stink of sewage emanating from them, he confirms for the tenth time they are vampire hunters...

Sigh...!

Victor couldn't help but sigh.

"No need to be disappointed, Darling! There are experienced hunters! Maybe in the future, you'll find other hunters better." Violet starts talking quickly as if trying to cheer him up.

Victor looks at Violet confused. "I'm not disappointed by that, I'm just disappointed that these two agents messed up our moment along with this stink of sewage, I was hoping they would be more...competent?" He explained.

"Oh... On second thought... They messed up our moment together, huh?" Remembering that she was about to finally catch up with Victor and those two hampered him with their stink, the anger she'd previously felt returned explosively, Violet suddenly starts to emit a bloody pressure.

Victor seeing Violet's bloodthirsty expression thought she was very beautiful, but he also thought 'Fuck, she's going to kill them...'

When Violet disappears, Victor also disappears; while watching her, he was thinking 'I can't let her kill those agents, I need to know their goals in this town.'

## Chapter 14: Thomas and Jimmy.

Thomas and his friend also sense Violet's killing intent, they stop arguing and assume a serious expression: "Jimmy!"

Dick-Head, now known as Jimmy said, "You only call my name in this kind of situation, Asshole!"

Jimmy takes a bible from the little bag he was carrying then he opens it and puts his hand on the pages of the bible, and begins to speak, "Oh my lord, please forgive these corrupt souls, and bless your lost lambs in this battle to come."

A golden light descends on Jimmy and Thomas. At that moment Thomas grabs the crucifix that was around his neck and yells out, "I am the man chosen by God to be His messenger!" Suddenly Thomas's crucifix changes its appearance and, slowly, a western sword forms in his hand. This sword had a normal appearance, but the blade was strange, the edge of the blade seemed to be covered by some kind of golden light.

Violet appears beside Thomas and, just as she was about to kick him, she is stopped by a golden barrier.

Violet pulls away and looks at her feet that were a little bruised, but soon are cured by the vampire's abnormal regeneration then she looks at Jimmy with a murderous glare.

When Thomas sees Violet's red eyes and her pale complexion, he yells with a hateful smile.

"Vampire!"

"We've actually found a Vampire...and it's still morning..." Jimmy opens his eyes wide as he realizes that only one coven of vampires could walk in the sun without worrying.

"Thomas, we must run quickly, we need to get away!"

"Huh? Why!? We have a vampire here, let's kill her!" Thomas yelled.

"Fool! Look at the situation calmly, she is a vampire but she is walking around in broad daylight! Only one-" Suddenly Violet appears at Jimmy's side again and attacks him, intending to rip his head off.

'She's trying to eliminate me!' Jimmy jumps back in an attempt to dodge, then pulls holy water from his bag and throws it to the ground.

He holds up certain pages of the bible and shouts, "Michael! Guardian Prince and Warrior, defend me and protect me with Your sword. Don't let any harm come to me!" Suddenly a golden sword falls from the sky and appears in front of Jimmy, the sword was giant and it seemed to be made of pure golden energy.

Violet quickly backs away, jumping back when she realizes she couldn't kill Jimmy in time, since she doesn't want to take Jimmy's attack. "Oh...? You're talented." She displayed a small predatory smile that showed off her sharp teeth.

"I don't want compliments from a demon like you!" Jimmy yelled.

"How rude, have you ever seen such a sexy, beautiful demon like her?" Victor suddenly appears on top of a fence while sitting down looking like a Japanese delinquent.

Jimmy turns when he hears another voice, then he looks at Victor and, seeing the predatory smile on Victor's face and his red eyes, Jimmy felt a shiver down his spine. 'Another vampire who can walk in the sunlight, they are from that Clan of cursed nobles! We don't have a chance here, we need to retreat!'

Thomas seeing that a new vampire appeared, and realizing that he was closer to him, exhibited a hateful smile: "God, bless this little servant with a strong body immune to fatigue. In this way, his servants

will fight countless battles!"

Thomas's body began to glow, and the golden light from the sword that was located on its blade began to glow brighter.

"Thomas! Don't do it, you fool! Damn it!" Jimmy yelled angrily when he saw what Thomas was about to do. They shouldn't be fighting this battle, we should have backed off and told the superiors that there are vampires from that cursed Clan in this town!

Thomas suddenly disappears into golden light.

"Hmm?" Victor looks to the side and sees that Thomas was approaching, 'Is he aiming for my head...?' From Victor's perspective, Thomas was still very slow, he also felt that the golden energy coming out of Thomas' sword was dangerous.

"Ahhhhh!! Give me your head!!" Suddenly Thomas' speed increased explosively and he swung his sword towards Victor!

Victor jumps up calmly and dodges Thomas's attack, but suddenly he feels like his face has been scratched? "Ugh" What is this pain? It is like I've been burned from the inside? It's like thousands of ants are biting my face at the same time.

He touches his face and thinks, 'I'm sure I dodged it, I'm not foolish enough to let that energy hit my body, but how did he hit me?'

"Thomas! You fool! Control your energy correctly! You missed a chance!"

"Ugh! I know!" Thomas spoke as he avoided hitting a wall in front of him. He managed to stop in time to avoid being smashed against the wall, he stopped in front of the wall and started breathing heavily. He had used all his energy in that attack, this was an attack that could cause permanent damage to an ordinary vampire.

'Oh, can he control the energy any way he wants? This is

interesting, it means that if he was an experienced hunter I would have lost my head. I understand. I understand.' Victor thought with a neutral face.

He was learning a lot from this situation, but he also felt strange; the longer this 'battle' dragged on he was getting calmer and calmer. He was feeling very strange, he thought the first time he fought while in control of his actions he would be more scared, but instead of scared, he is feeling very calm; he can't explain to himself why he is feeling that way.

Suddenly a bloody pressure exploded around everyone, Victor, Thomas, and Jimmy look at Violet in shock and her expression was distorted into pure hatred.

"YOU FUCKERS!!"

BOOOOOOM!

A pillar of fire burst from Violet's body like a volcano that had erupted.

She puts her hand to her face like she's possessed by something while mumbling loud enough for everyone to hear.

"HOW DARE YOU!? HOW DARE YOU!? How dare you hurt my beloved, Darling!? You mother fucking pigs!!" How could Violet allow this? Her beloved Darling was hurt by mere pigs! They're just food for vampires, how dare they!?

"T-That fire..." Thomas spoke with an expression of fear.

"I warned you! We should have backed off! We don't stand a chance against someone from that cursed clan! You never listen to me!" Jimmy yelled as he kept his attention on Victor who was wearing a gentle smile and Violet who had a hateful expression.

Looking at the pillar of fire that Violet was producing, all that was

on Jimmy's mind now is to run away. He was extremely terrified since he provoked a monster that he shouldn't provoke!

"Hahaha," Victor suddenly started to laugh lightly when he saw Violet's face. She was very adorable to him and, because of that, he was laughing with happiness.

Jimmy and Thomas looked at Victor like they were looking at a madman, how can he laugh in this situation?

"Why are you laughing!?" Thomas yelled annoyed as he watched the cut on Victor's face abnormally heal, he was internally surprised by this, 'our god's energy healed so easily!? Is that the power of a noble vampire?'

Jimmy, when he heard what Thomas said, looked at Thomas with murderous eyes. He promised himself he would part with Thomas if he survives all this, that man is just too stupid!

"Hmm? Why am I laughing? I really do not know...? I just felt like laughing, so I laughed..." Victor lied easily, he looks at Violet with a loving smile.

"Isn't she beautiful? Tell me, have you ever seen a woman more beautiful than her?" Victor asked while smiling.

"Huh...?" The hunters' brains stopped working for a few seconds. They looked at Violet, saw her hateful expression, and they couldn't help but think, 'Is that beautiful? Was this vampire's brain melted by the previous attack?'

Victor ignores the hunters and walks towards Violet then, when he gets close to Violet, he lightly touches her face. Strangely the fire didn't burn him, he just felt comfortable as if it was natural for him.

Violet slowly starts to ignore the hunters and looks at Victor with murderous eyes, suddenly she feels something invading her mouth.

"Hump-!" Feeling something wet invading her mouth, and realizing what Victor was doing, Violet's hateful expression slowly began to melt and her cheeks slowly began to turn a shade redder.

Tongues have started dancing in Violet's and Victor's mouths, but that doesn't last long; when Victor separates a bridge of saliva forms, then he flashes a gentle smile.

"Are you calmer?"

"Y-yes," She spoke with red cheeks as she turned her face and smiled a little, happily.

Victor laughs and pats her head. He finds the raw change in Violet's personality adorable, one moment she's a vampire killer, and the other moment she acts like a teenager who's in love, and he loved that trait of Violet.

Suddenly, Victor looks at the two agents who were slowly trying to get away. Seeing that Victor looked at them, the hunters couldn't help but speak in fear, "Oh Shit."

Victor hears footsteps approaching and he decides to leave the scene; although Violet has evacuated the surrounding area, the fire that Violet invoked drew a lot of attention, "Honey, get that boy with bowl hair and I'll get Thomas. Do as I say, okay?" he spoke with a gentle smile.

"Y-yes, D-Darling," she commented stuttering, while her expression was a little red with embarrassment.

Victor uses his speed, and he disappears beside Violet then reappears beside Thomas.

"You-" Thomas was going to say something, but Victor kicked him in the face and put him to sleep he then picks Thomas up like a sack of potatoes and disappears.

Violet appears alongside Jimmy but, unlike Thomas, Jimmy can't resist being taken away. 'God, please protect this lamb that is being kidnapped to the devil's lair'

...

In an abandoned building on the outskirts of where Violet and Victor's battle took place.

I throw the hunter named Thomas to the ground, when he falls to the ground he suddenly wakes up while yelling, "Ouch!"

Violet came right behind me and threw the hunter named Jimmy to the ground. "Ouch!" he started to massage his ass.

I notice that Violet is staring at Thomas with a murderous look so I move closer to her and start stroking her head, "How are you feeling?"

Her expression softens and she bites her lip in frustration, "I'm angry, I want to kill him! He hurt my, Darling!"

I nod my head several times as if I'm agreeing with what she said, but actually I was thinking it's a good thing she's letting off steam. After all, if you hold too many emotions bottled up in your body, you can go crazy. Venting is a good thing, especially for vampires who feel emotions more strongly than humans.

Did she get that way for just a little cut...? I can't help but hug her in happiness!

"Humpf?" Violet made a weird sound as I hugged her and put her head on my chest. When she realized what I did, the rest of her turned bright red and it seems like smoke started to come out of her head, a phenomenon that happened due to her powers, I think...

I realize she was breathing heavily, she was embarrassed but she seemed to like my scent.

"I like when you are mad for me, but you can't lose control like

that." I drop her head from my chest and gently take her face in my hands then I make her look at me, "Thanks for being mad for me, but don't lose control of your emotions in battle." I spoke in a definite tone not allowing refusal. I may not be battle savvy, but one thing I'm sure of, losing control of emotions in a battle with hunters who were bred to exterminate vampires is foolish.

"I, I w-will try not to lose control~" She replied while breathing heavily, I could see her face was very red.

I laughed a little, "I'll also try not to lose control of my emotions," Wow, I sound like a hypocrite now, I tell her not to lose control of emotions but I also don't know if I can control my emotions in the middle of battle.

I say this for the simple reason that I don't know my current self, sometimes my emotions seem out of control like in the Luan incident and sometimes my emotions are calm as a lake, this is just incomprehensible to me.

Normally, I would be able to control my emotions, that was something I learned from my mother. But, since I became a vampire, I don't recognize myself anymore, easy things that I could do before like controlling emotions are no longer easy and became more difficult, this was a very strange situation for me.

But I realized something, I'm only forced to demonstrate my true self when I have personal grudges with the enemy, or when I think the opponent is strong enough to face me.

I didn't know I was a battle maniac? Actually, what am I? Hmm.

Let's think about possible situations so I can form a coherent train of thought.

The first situation, Luan. I had a grudge against him, and because of that, I felt great when I humiliated him.

The second situation, The Inquisition. The moment I realized the hunters couldn't give me a challenge, I lost interest, and I calmed down...

Heh... I'm changing... I'm changing too fast and I don't know what's going to happen when my evolution stops, what am I going to become? I can't help but display a predatory smile that shows off all my sharp teeth as I imagine what I'll become when I stop evolving.

Seeing my smile, I can feel Violet shivering, and I can smell her scent that is leaking from her secret garden; she seemed to be excited.

"Cough, hmm, can we leave?" Hunter Jimmy asked in a shy tone.

Violet stops looking at me and looks at Jimmy with an annoyed look, I lightly patted Violet's head and pulled away from her.

Come to think of it now these two men are no longer reeking like sewage, what's going on? Was it the effect of that device they were using?

I smell the air a little bit and they don't stink at all... Stopping to think about it now, during the previous fight I felt their stink getting stronger, I think it's the energy they use that makes them stink like sewage for me and Violet?

I look at Jimmy and see that he has a red face, embarrassed at Violet and I's show of affection; I flash a small smile.

"Not yet," I say.

"Oh, I see," He spoke in a dismayed tone.

I laughed lightly, "Don't worry, as long as you say everything you know you can get out of here alive, after all, your goal here isn't us, right?"

Jimmy looks at me with an excited face, "Yes! We came here to

hunt a vampire named Lucy, he is wreaking havoc in the human world and some time ago he kidnapped several men and women-

"Jimmy, what are you doing!?" Thomas interrupts Jimmy.

Something happens that surprises Violet and me, Jimmy turns and looks at Thomas with an annoyed look, "Shut fuck up, you fucking muscle brain!"

"...Huh...?" Thomas didn't understand.

## Chapter 15: Jimmy is a smart guy.

Something happens that surprises Violet and me, Jimmy turns and looks at Thomas with an annoyed look, "Shut fuck up, you fucking muscle brain!"

"...Huh...?" Thomas didn't understand why his friend reacted so strongly to his words. He was going to say something again, but he decided to keep quiet because he saw the look Jimmy was giving him, it was a look that said 'shut up and let me figure this out! '.

'Well, this is interesting; Jimmy seems to be a smarter man than Thomas who only acts out of emotion', I thought as I looked at the two hunters standing in front of me.

"Like I was saying..." Jimmy looks at me and flashes a 'gentle' smile, then he continues with bright eyes, "Sir Vampire, we're just here to hunt down the vampire named Lucy!"

I had already deduced that, "Oh? Who is participating in this hunt?" I ask curiously; Jimmy seemed to be very willing to cooperate.

"Me, this idiot here, and three more veteran hunters. A man named Carlos Reiss, he's an American vampire hunter, and a woman named Mizuki, she doesn't have a last name that I know, she's a Japanese hunter." Jimmy spilled everything as if he were confessing his sins to a priest.

When Mizuki's name was mentioned I felt a slight tensing from Violet, so I looked at her. When she saw my look, she opened her mouth and began to speak.

"Mizuki is a veteran hunter, she is one of the new generals of The Inquisition," She spoke in a neutral tone.

Then she continues, "She can fight a vampire who is over 500

years old easily, the last report I heard about Mizuki was from Japan where she had single-handedly eliminated 10 Clans of noble Vampires. Japan's noble vampires aren't as strong as those in the Romanian community, but even so, that's an impressive feat."

"How many generals are there?" I ask curious, I was surprised by the fact that it seems like humans have strong people on their side.

"Four, each general is an exceptional force that can fight 1000+-year-old vampires easily, they are the strongest humans alive..." Violet seemed to praise them for a moment, then she continued.

"I don't know how they do it, but it looks like The Inquisition is getting stronger as time goes on."

Hmm, historically speaking, humans always adapt against the threats they faced, so it's no surprise they're getting stronger, but I'm pretty sure the methods they're using to get stronger aren't nice for the people involved. After all, humans can commit the greatest atrocities for the greater good.

Jimmy suddenly began to speak out loud.

"It is clear! The generals are God's chosen warriors! They have eternal youth and many God-given abilities! Ahh~ Father bless this lost lamb," he spoke like a fanatic as he looked up at the roof of the abandoned building and clasped both hands together in a gesture of prayer.

'Chosen by god, huh?' I thought with a little skepticism. 'Does the god he talks about so much exist? Why didn't he eliminate vampires? After all, he was supposed to be a powerful being, right?' I think someone is using the name of God to bring people together to fight for their organization's goals... Well, this wouldn't be the first time in history that someone has used the name of God to do something like that.

"And? The last hunter, what's his name?" I ask Jimmy.

Jimmy stopped praying and looked at me, "It's not him, it's her"

Then he continues, "Her name is Maria, she is an American woman and also Carlos' partner, but she is missing."

Hmm, Maria, Carlos, and Mizuki... Three strong hunters and two beginners. They are putting a lot of effort into hunting Lucy, as I believe that just Mizuki's presence alone would be enough to eliminate Lucy, he didn't look like a strong vampire.

I start to reflect on the information I obtained and I can't help but think of something.

The situation has changed... This is becoming a dangerous game, and interesting... I can't help but smile a little when I think about it.

But then I put my hand to my face and think; 'when did I start having suicidal tendencies? And, why am having fun with this situation?' I'm a newborn vampire, if I were to confront these hunters I would just die like a pig being slaughtered, I need to control myself!

I start thinking about what I should do next, then I look at Violet who's been staring at me for a long time and she says, "We can't let them go anymore."

I nod in agreement with my wife's words, it looks like she had the same thought as me.

"Ehhh? Why, but we told you everything we know! Please do not kill me!" Jimmy spoke in despair.

I look at Jimmy and I can't help but think he's very cowardly and at the same time very smart, he prioritizes his life and doesn't mind selling out his allies to live on. He's the perfect example of a soldier that you wouldn't want around in your organization. By comparison, Thomas is a loyal man, and hotheaded; he is a perfect pawn...

"Just out of curiosity, did you choose Thomas as your partner?" I asked with genuine curiosity as I pointed at Thomas.

"I didn't choose him! God chose us to be each other's companions!" Jimmy said annoyed, he seemed to have spent a lot of time with Thomas.

Oh... Now, I get it. They brought the two together on purpose, they hoped that Thomas' loyal personality would pass on to Jimmy, after all, people are influenced by other people.

It seems that 'God' is a very cautious being.

"Well, I apologize, Jimmy. I can't let you go, after all, the situation has changed but don't worry, we won't treat you badly" I said with an innocent smile.

I appear next to Jimmy and try to test something I've wanted to for a long time, and now we have the perfect guinea pig here. "Look into my eyes."

My eyes turn blood red. "You will do whatever I order, okay?"

Soon I hear Violet, "That isn't going to work, Darling. They have something that prevents them from being enchanted."

"Oh?" I look at Violet.

"We've never found out what it is, but The Inquisition has ways that can prevent vampires from enchanting the members-" She suddenly stops talking when she hears Jimmy say:

"Yes, I will," Jimmy spoke with blood-red eyes.

"...Huh...? Darling! What did you do?" Violet asked excitedly.

"I-" I was about to answer Violet but Thomas, who was just silently looking at us with hate, yelled.

"I'm going to kill you, bastard! What did you do to Jimmy!!" He looked at me like I was his mortal enemy.

... This man has a very big hatred, huh? Looks like something happened in the past, I can guess what happened just from the look of hatred he has for me, looks like he's a victim of vampires.

"Oh my god, please-" As he was about to start speaking the incantation I appeared in front of him and, grabbing him by the neck with my right hand, held him in the air.

"Just shut up, and obey me for now, okay?" He looked into my red eyes, and soon his eyes turned red.

"Yes," He spoke in a mechanical tone as if he had no life.

I drop him gently to the ground.

Looking at the two hunters, I display a small smile. I was still curious about some things, especially about the spells they did in the last fight; I'll make them tell me everything I want to know.

"Let's get them to your mansion, I don't want potential enemies in my parents' house," I say.

"I was thinking the same thing, Darling."

...

Sasha House.

"I heard what happens, Lady Sasha," Kaguya spoke in a neutral tone with a little sympathy as she looked at Sasha.

She was currently in a luxury hotel room, precisely speaking, she was on the 25th floor of a luxury hotel in a presidential suite. She was looking at a blonde woman with short hair and blue eyes that were constantly changing from red to blue, it was quite obvious to Kaguya that Sasha was bloodthirsty.

Sasha has a voluptuous body, big breasts, but not as big as Ruby's, and pale skin, but the feature that draws the most attention is her ass and her legs, which were very thick. If Ruby had the biggest breasts, Sasha had the biggest ass and leg Kaguya had ever seen.

"And...? Did you come here to give me your pity?" She spoke with cold, tired eyes.

Kaguya shakes her head, and asks in a neutral tone, "What happened?"

"This is not your problem," Sasha spoke coldly.

"Wrong," Kaguya said coldly as her eyes changed to blood-red.

"I've known Julia longer than you, she was like a teacher to all the maids who served the houses of the four vampire earls... Just like she was a teacher to me, she was a mother to you, this is my problem too."

Sasha opened her eyes a little, and spoke in a sad voice, "...I understand...I'm sorry."

Kaguya was silent for a moment, she wasn't very good at comforting a person, "What happened?" She asked again in a neutral tone.

Sasha's eyes that had been alternating between sapphire blue and blood-red suddenly turn red, and then she orders, "Maid!"

A blonde maid gently opens the door of the room she was in, walks slowly towards Sasha's side, and stands beside Sasha waiting for any order from her master. From beginning to end, all her movements were very robotic, it was quite clear that Sasha was abusing her status as 'master'.

Kaguya looks to the side and sees the blonde woman with her hair tied in a low bun; she has blue eyes and a serious expression.

Her outfit is a maid's uniform similar to the one Kaguya wears and she wears long black gloves so as not to directly touch her master, Kaguya could also see with her vampire vision small threads surrounding the woman as if they were protecting her.

When the maid appeared, Sasha began to speak, "After the ritual took place, I went home," she started to describe what happened.

## Chapter 16: Ambush.

January 31st, the day the ritual that turned Victor into a vampire took place.

Sasha's POV

"I do not believe this! I do not believe this! It's all Violet's fault, that stupid stalker!" I said as I jumped from building to building and held my neck, my breathing was ragged and my mouth was oozing blood from that newly transformed human.

Ahhh~, this blood tastes so good, this blood makes those sack drinks that my family provides taste like nothing, the best blood I've ever tasted and now it's mine? Is this just mine?

I shake my head several times to get that thought out of my head then stop on top of a building and look up at the cloudy sky, I sigh and say:

"I can't believe I'm married to a stranger..."

I mean, Victor is not a complete stranger, Violet has always talked about him to Ruby and me since when we were kids. We always had to listen to Violet talking about her 'Darling'.

Honestly, when I was a kid I found this very irritating, but as time went on I got used to Violet's craziness.

"I accepted the request to help with the ritual, but I never thought something like this would happen," I said as I crouched down and sat in the building.

"I mean, who would have thought this would happen!? Shouldn't the ritual be individual!? Why did this irregularity happen!? Because of that now, I'm married! And I don't even know my husband personally!"

I practically yelled as I held my head in frustration.

It's all Violet's fault!!

Ohhhh! I'm getting annoyed again!

"Wait..." Suddenly, I realize something important, "If I don't take my husband's blood, I'll dry up... I'll turn into a dry mummy, and my body will go into hibernation... and that is still a positive result. In the worst case, I'll go crazy from bloodlust..."

"FUUUUUUCK!" I yelled in frustration, how am I supposed to make this work!? "Hey, Victor, I am your wife? Give me your blood!" I spoke like I was acting in a drama, but soon my face turned bright red.

NOOOOOOOOOO! This is shameful! I never met him in person! I shake my head several times to get that thought out of my head.

Anyway! I must go home!

I get up and jump towards a mansion I bought.

...

Arriving at the mansion, I open the door and the first thing I see made me freeze in disbelief, my maid Julia's headless body was sprawled on the couch. The room was messed up, it was like a fight had happened, and it wasn't just Julia's body that was scattered.

"N-N-No, J-Julia...?" I spoke in disbelief, I couldn't form coherent thoughts when I saw the body of the maid who practically raised me since I was little.

I could see the bodies of all my servants, vampires, and humans... A massacre took place here while I was gone.

I didn't have time to be in mourning because I felt someone approaching at high speed, I covered my body with my lightning and dodged the attack.

The attack passes by me and I can see the door to my mansion breaking into pieces.

"Oh? The ambush failed, that's too bad." I hear a man's voice, looking at the man I see he's a tall bald white man and he's wearing a priest's robes, but it looks like it's been adapted to look like a black suit.

"Church dogs," I growled in anger, but soon I swallow that anger and try to stay calm; now is not the time to lose control, but I can't, I can't control my anger. Seeing the body of my headless mother, a burning fury I can't control escapes my body.

"You FUCKERS!!!!"

Booom!

Lightning started to cover my entire body.

The man ignores me and pulls tight the black glove he was wearing in a gesture as if the glove was loose, he stands like a martial artist and says, "God bless this servant's fist so he can punish sinners."  
"

When the man said this, his fist began to glow with a faint golden glow.

When I try to move using my legs, I feel my movements being restricted. "Success, good job Carlos." Suddenly, a woman who was wearing a nun's dress appears, same as the man, it looks like her uniform was tailored to look like a tight-fitting suit. I could see in her hands she held several strands spread all over the mansion, they suspend me in the air in a way that I look like I'm on a crucifix.

"Nice job Maria," Carlos spoke in a neutral tone, "Honestly, I don't want to deal with the heiress of Clan Fulger, those rays are quite incompatible with my fighting style."

"Indeed, you're lucky to have me as your partner, or you could never capture her alive," Maria said.

"You are my lucky charm," Carlos praised her with visible feelings, they seemed to have something together.

My anger reached the boiling point when these dogs treated me like I was easy prey to hunt, they invade my house... They kill the woman who was like a mother to me, they kill my servants and still despise me!? Unforgivable!

"CHURCH DOGS!" I screamed angrily, my teeth started to change and got sharper then a bloody pressure started to leak out of my body. I'm going to kill them!

"Sigh, I knew it wouldn't be that easy," Carlos grumbled as if it were troublesome.

"Indeed, she wouldn't be the heiress of a count clan if she was weak," Maria supports him, she gestures with her hands, and the wires that were holding me start to get tighter, but I also felt my skin burning.

"Ahhhhh!!" I cry out in pain, I look at the strands and realize they have a slight golden glow. Realizing I was at a disadvantage while fighting indoors with this woman, I made a decision... A decision that hurt my pride, 'I need to run away, I can't fight alone now', I needed to run away...

I needed to run away, I know I needed to, but... I look at Julia's headless body and seeing that the rage that was running rampant started to rise again. I was angry, I was angry, I want revenge!

I focused my gaze on Maria, with the previous demonstration, it's pretty obvious that the bald guy has feelings for Maria. I flash a smile almost on the verge of insanity and decide to use a technique my real 'mother' taught me.

Covering my body with golden lightning, I start to force my body to go beyond the possible limits of a noble vampire. I feel the rays entering my body and affecting it with small jolts of electricity, this is a self-destructive technique that only can be used by me, this technique expands my speed above the limit of sound.

I kick the air with my legs, and suddenly they both hear a sonic boom.

**BOOOOM!**

I feel the woman's strands snapping, and releasing me. When I'm released, I use my speed and appear behind Maria, I was tempted to finish Carlos now, but when I saw his body being covered by dense golden energy as I ran, I changed my mind... And this decision to kill Carlos here wouldn't satisfy me, he needs to suffer, he needs to see his mate become something he hunts.

I bite Maria on the neck, and when she realizes what's about to happen, she screams.

"Nooooo!" I hear Church Hound's desperate cry and it made me bite her neck even harder and make her scream even more.

"MARIA?!!" Carlos ran towards us, but the moment he wanted to act to help Maria, I disappeared.

"Cursed be the vampires!!!" The Church Hound's scream was ironically like a devil's scream, and I don't know why, but I start to laugh out loud and with tears in my eyes, "Fuck you, shitty dog!" I yelled as I fled.

A few KM away from Sasha's mansion.

Sasha throws Maria on the ground and tears off the crucifix that was around Maria's neck, then she bites her finger and a drop of blood falls to the ground, when this drop falls to the ground, a magic circle is formed. "I didn't prepare the proper materials for you to become my

full-fledged servant, but who cares? With this you'll become what you hate the most, a vampire, and worse than a normal vampire, you'll become a defective vampire." She spoke with a smile that showed all of her sharp teeth as tiny tears fell from her face.

The last vision before Maria fell into unconsciousness was the image of Sasha smiling at her with a crazy smile as tears fell from her face.

...

Kaguya listened to the whole story from Sasha's mouth in silence, from beginning to end, Kaguya's expression didn't change, but Kaguya's indifferent atmosphere suddenly exploded with killing intent when she heard the state of Julia's body.

Kaguya looked at Maria, the former vampire slayer who has now turned into what she swore to kill. Kaguya's expression remained indifferent, but her atmosphere said everything she needed to know, she's furious.

Maria, Sasha's new maid, just looked at Kaguya with serious eyes, it was like she wasn't affected by Kaguya's pure intention to kill, but if we looked with sharper eyes, we would all be able to see small beads of sweat falling from Maria's face.

Maria's instincts were screaming for her to do something, but unfortunately, the master's order was absolute. She couldn't do anything, since the moment she became Sasha's servant the noble vampire always had her on a tight leash, she always ordered her to stay close.

"A trap... The church dogs are more active than I thought, something is going on behind the scenes," Kaguya spoke in a neutral tone as she looked at Sasha, her killing intent suddenly disappeared, but Sasha could see by the look in Kaguya's eyes that her anger has not yet ceased.

"Yes, according to my maid, a man named Lucy stole something very valuable from the church. Unfortunately, I couldn't get information on what that 'something' is, my maid didn't know anything," Sasha spoke neutrally while showing disdain for the word 'my maid'.

"Are you sure about that?" Kaguya questioned her.

Sasha decides to demonstrate with actions, she looks at Maria, then Sasha's eyes start to sparkle: "Tell me what you were planning to do with your lover."

"We were planning to get married and have kids next year," Maria spoke in a robotic tone as her eyes glowed red, Sasha's smile grew into a hateful smile when she heard these words, she seemed to be planning something and Kaguya noticed this smile.

"When you killed my former head maid, what did you feel? And what was your purpose in making that trap?"

"Nothing, I feel nothing. After all, this is just a job, Carlos attacked the mansion head-on and killed all the servants, while I ripped the vampire maid's head off and set a trap with my wires, our goal was to capture the heiress of the Fulger clan"

"Stop, I get your point," Kaguya spoke in a neutral tone, she understood why Sasha was demonstrating this to her, Sasha wanted to tell Kaguya with these actions that the new maid was in her control.

"Oh? But now it was getting to the good part." Sasha spoke like this was all a big joke, she obviously wasn't right in her head.

"Continue, why did you want to capture me?" Sasha ordered.

"The Inquisition received information that the leader of Clan Fulger lost his position as a vampire count and became an ordinary noble vampire. The inquisition decided it would be a good opportunity to further weaken this Clan by capturing their heiress who was located in the United States of America."

Kaguya opened her eyes wide when she heard what Maria said.

Seeing the shocked expression on her always stoic face, Sasha can't help commenting in a broken tone as her eyes constantly change from blood red to green, "Yes, funny, right? My parents will lose the earl title, my mother probably must have done the stupid things she always does, and in the end, I think she bet our title on some stupid game made by the nobles."

"And because of that, these idiots here thought it would be a good idea to capture me and use me as a bargaining chip so they can further diminish the strength of my Clan, and you know what's funny?" Sasha spoke.

"If these church dogs had been successful, my parents wouldn't care about my existence, they would say I was weak or something and that I should die. A very funny situation, right? The only people who cared about me died because of those idiots who call me daughter." Sasha spoke dismissively.

"Lady Sasha," Kaguya didn't know what to say.

"I don't want your pity-" Sasha was about to say something, but suddenly she realized that Kaguya was standing beside her while her body was hidden by the darkness.

"I'm sorry, Lady Sasha,"

"Huh-?" Sasha just stared into Kaguya's glowing red eyes with a shocked expression, she never thought Kaguya would do that to her.

Kaguya slits Sasha's neck, and blood sprays her face, soon Sasha falls to the ground as if she were dead.

Kaguya disappears again, and appears behind Maria, then attacks the maid's ribs with shadowy daggers after which she slashes Maria's neck.

Maria's eyes suddenly lose the glow of life and she falls to the ground.

"Sigh, it's hard to be a perfect maid," Kaguya sighs as she wipes her face with a handkerchief she took from her pocket and suddenly her shadows start to grow and slowly swallow Maria, then Maria's body disappears into Kaguya's shadows.

Kaguya turns her face away and looks at Sasha's body as several thoughts run through her head.

## Chapter 17: She is your wife.

Pov Kaguya.

Sigh, it's hard to be a perfect maid, I can't let myself think about it again as I look over my shoulder and see an all-black bag made of a material that keeps sunlight out. Inside that bag was Lady Sasha, a friend From Lady Violet's childhood; I could put Lady Sasha in my shadow, but that would be pretty rude to her, after all, my shadow isn't a nice place...

Sigh. I can't help but sigh again.

A maid's duty is to always want the best for her master, this was a teaching that Julia always put in my head when I was younger.

Julia was a role model for all maids, a maid considered to be perfect who trained all maids serving the households of noble vampires of count status. She was Sasha's personal maid, she was also the head maid of the Fulger clan and, most importantly, she was also like a mother to Sasha herself.

"Losing a mother figure, and finding out your family lost their count status in the nobility must have been quite a shock to Lady Sasha," I mumble under my breath with a little pity as I bounced from building to building; I was coming back to Lord Victor's house.

Lady Sasha is not in a good mental condition, she is normally a noble woman, calm, and someone who follows the rules of the vampire world faithfully. But, when she went through several losses in a short time her mental state was affected and she was not thinking clearly.

If I left Lady Sasha alone she would make a rash decision that could cause her death, and if Lady Sasha died, Lord Victor would likely lose himself in bloodlust or fall into a deep sleep.

After all, the ritual is something that cannot be broken; to prevent the worst fate from happening the three women must stay together because if they don't, they will suffer.

Lord Victor needs his wives' blood and his wives need Lord Victor's blood, and since Lady Violet is Lord Victor's wife, I need to resolve this situation...

"Sigh... Should I really look for another job? Maybe I can go back to Japan and teach younger maids in the future," I spoke out loud, but I knew that was not what I wanted. I want to be a perfect maid, and a perfect maid is one who chooses her master, but it seems I was far from that goal... Maybe Lord Victor will praise me for doing a good job...?

I shake my head several times to get this thought out of my mind, not noticing that my face is a little red, I keep jumping from building to building.

...

Victor POV.

Violet and I returned with the two hunters to her mansion. After quizzing the hunters about their abilities and everything I could know about the techniques they use, I was satisfied when I finished my interrogation.

I left the two hunters in the care of Violet and Violet's servants, I told her not to treat the two badly, after all, we could use them as a bargaining chip for veteran hunters. Although I doubt these veteran hunters will care about their recruits they are still a 'good' organization, right? So they should keep up appearances I think.

Good, and Evil are subjective; if I do good for one person and at the same time I harm another person, even if I don't know I did it, for the person I harmed I will be considered 'evil', and for the person I helped, I'll be considered 'good'.

In the end, there is no good and bad, what exists are just choices and the consequences of your choices

As Newton said in the past, for every action you make a reaction is created at the same time, that thought can be included in real life too and not just in physics.

Before leaving the mansion, I told Violet to bring more clothes than usual because I would use that excuse at home. After all, I know my mom, I'm sure she'll ask why Violet didn't come home.

Violet agreed with me and said she would.

Returning home, I meet my parents, "Where's Violet?" My mom asked me, she was watching a movie while my dad was washing the dishes, apparently, they bought food.

In our house there's no such nonsense about the man sitting on the couch and the woman washing dishes, we divide our tasks into weekdays, it seems like today is my father's day to wash the dishes.

"She's a little busy, she lives in a mansion so she has a lot of clothes to bring," I spoke in a neutral tone.

"...You really hit the jackpot, you got a rich, beautiful, and loving wife... I have nothing more to teach you, as a mother, I'm proud! As expected of me," My mother commented proudly of me as a small tear fell from her face, she looked like an ancient master who taught their disciple everything they learned and was proud of their disciple.

"Mother..." I was speechless as I looked at my mother.

"I mean, if it were up to your father, you would work as a bricklayer and you would whistle to women passing by on the street. You would be a caveman, I don't want my son to be like that." She spoke with a serious face as if she were teaching me something important.

"Oof." I saw my dad react like a knife had gone into his chest.

"Woman, why did you agree to date me back then if I was a caveman!?" My dad practically yelled as he stopped washing the dishes.

My mom turns her face and looks at my dad, and responds with the same honesty she always has, "Well, you were tall, muscular, and knew how to treat a woman well ... And your dragon warrior was a great warrior too."

"Anna"

"Leon"

The two looked like two teenagers in love.

"Okay stop, I don't want to hear about that," I said while making a stop gesture. I was used to this casual exchange from my parents, but even though I am used to it, I don't want to see it!

Suddenly, Kaguya walks through the door of the house and, when she closes the door, she calls my parents' attention.

"Mister Leon, and Mistress Anna, I came back sorry for the delay."

"Oh, Kaguya, right? Where were you, I haven't seen you all morning." my mom asked.

"I was solving some problems that Lady Violet forgot to deal with," Kaguya spoke in a neutral tone.

"Oh, good job! As expected of a professional maid, you guys are different." My mom praised her honestly.

It seems that my mother's compliment seemed to work because Kaguya flashed a small satisfied smile and spoke in her usual neutral tone as she seemed to puff out her chest, "This is easy for me."

"Umu, Umu! Get in the house, let's talk!" My mom spoke with a big smile as she invited Kaguya to her side.

"Unfortunately, I can't do that right now, I'm working," Kaguya said as she grabs my arms.

I'm a little surprised by Kaguya's attitude.

"Oh?" My mother displays a meaningful smile.

I look at her smile and immediately understand what she's thinking; are you after another girl? What if Violet finds out about this? Be careful, I won't meddle in your personal life, but I don't want a child killed by their wife!

How do I know she specifically said that? Well, in the past, she and I talked a lot about the future and, she said those exact words; she said she wouldn't meddle in my personal life, after all, I would be an adult in the future, she just didn't she wanted the tragedy she saw in an anime to be repeated with her womanizing son...

I felt a lot of damage that day when she said the word 'womanizing', at the time I couldn't even catch a fly, let alone catch a woman.

"Lord Victor, we have a problem," Kaguya spoke in a low voice as she looked at me with a serious expression.

Seeing Kaguya's serious expression, I understand that something serious has happened and Kaguya needs me for something. After all, she's a serious maid, and she wouldn't make a joke about a problem. I nod my head indicating that I understand, and I tell my parents, "I'll work something out with Kaguya, I'll be back soon."

"Take care~" My mom spoke as she waved at me, but suddenly she makes an expression like she remembers something and she yells, "Victor! You should go get Zack from the vet, he must be missing you!"

"Oh!! I had completely forgotten about my cat." I smack my hand over my head, now that I've stopped to think about it, I've been missing stroking that fluffy fur. Deciding that I would pick up Zack from the vet later, I went out with Kaguya.

When Victor left his house with Kaguya, they entered a secret passage that was close to a wall, and soon they slowly descended into the basement of the house.

"Do you think Victor is doing things with Kaguya?" Leon asked curiously when he saw the house door close.

"I doubt it. I know my son, I raised him to be a loyal man; he won't run after another woman if he's married to a woman as beautiful as Violet, something probably happened." Anna, Victor's mother, spoke with an unconcerned expression.

"I see," Leon said and then continued washing the dishes. "Wait, they're married, right? But why was there no wedding ceremony?" He spoke as he washed the dishes, but when he realized what he was saying, he looked at Anna.

Suddenly Anna looks like she's been struck by lightning, she freezes and looks at Leon with shining eyes, it was like she had something interesting to do.

Leon, seeing this, just thought; 'Oh shit, I'm sorry, son.'

...

"...I didn't know maid work included kidnapping beautiful women, is that a new kind of fetish?" I asked Kaguya who ignored what I said while looking at the two blonde women who were sleeping in two separate beds, the first blonde woman was wearing a modern maid dress that looked like Kaguya's.

And the other woman... She was beautiful... Unlike Violet, she had short blond hair that reached her neck, very pale skin, thick

thighs, and big breasts.

she was wearing a long-sleeved black silk shirt with a two-button collar that goes to the middle of the neck, between her breasts there was a white square-shaped tile embroidered on the edges in gold, it looks very tight and, since it is silk, and you could completely see her round breasts and her very slim waist. What was even more surprising was the white sailor-like coat with a bow tie tied just above her breasts, just leaving the white coat over her shoulder without actually wearing it.

She wore a white skirt with two belts, one at the waist and one falling more diagonally on the right side, it was cut like those cheongsam dresses and showed off a sexy black garter belt that covered her long, perfect legs.

I noticed she was also wearing white 2-inch high heels, but the heels were leaning against the side of the bed.

This woman was very attractive, I feel my vision changing, and I look at her and feel the same thing as when I saw Violet for the first time. It was an inexplicable attraction, it was like I needed to suck her blood, "Ugh." I put a hand to my throat and walk away quickly.

looking at my reaction to seeing the blonde woman for a long time, Kaguya spoke in a neutral tone, "You're reacting to her, huh?"

"Who is she?" I asked as I held my heart, I thought I had quenched my bloodlust with Violet, but why was I reacting so strongly?

Kaguya doesn't answer me, she looks at the woman who's been lying in bed for a long time and I see her hesitate as if she's making an important decision, in the end, she seems to make up her mind then looks at me and speaks in a serious tone of voice, "She's your wife."

"...Huh?" I look at Kaguya in shock with my mouth agape.

## Chapter 18: Sasha Fulger.

"She is your wife." Kaguya repeated what she said in the same tone of voice.

"That I heard," I said in a surprised tone, I took a deep breath and asked in a neutral tone.

"What I meant was, what do you mean she's my wife?"

"...Well, she is your wife?" She spoke with a confused face.

"Kaguya," I stared at her with a look telling her to explain what was going on.

Kaguya sighed. "Normally, as a servant of Lady Violet, I shouldn't be telling you this information, but..." She bit her lip and it looked like she was having some difficulty speaking.

I start to think of Kaguya's personality, she is a loyal maid who claims to want to be the perfect maid, a maid who does everything for her master's sake; Oh, I get it, she's thinking she's committing a betrayal by talking about something Violet probably forbade.

I move closer to her as I try to ignore the temptation to bite the blonde woman's neck who was lying asleep on the bed, I swallowed hard and bit my lip a little.

I patted Kaguya's head and said, "Don't worry, Just tell me what happened; if Violet says something, you have my support."

When I started stroking Kaguya's head I felt her body tremble a little, and then she shows a small smile on her face; she seems happy about something, then she says:

"I will trust Lord Victor." She spoke in a neutral tone while keeping

the smile on her face.

Realizing she was going to tell me what's going on I stop stroking her head; I feel her shiver a little, and suddenly Kaguya's hand moves at inhuman speed and takes my hand and places it on her head again. She then lifted her face and looked into my red eyes with a blank look.

Question marks started appearing around me, I didn't understand what was going on, but when I looked where she was holding my hand, I understood something; she wanted me to stroke her head.

Soon, I start stroking her head again and she displays a satisfied smile, I can't help shaking my head to myself when I see this maid's attitude; she claims to be a perfect and serious maid, but she is surprisingly cute sometimes.

Somehow, seeing Kaguya's expression, I managed to calm down. My bloodlust was still screaming like crazy, but now it was on a more manageable scale.

"Explain what happened," I told Kaguya.

Kaguya nods and says, "This woman's name is Sasha... Sasha Fulger, just like Lady Violet... She is your wife." Soon she starts telling me all the events that Sasha suffered.

I listened to everything with a neutral expression as I stroked Kaguya's head. My emotions fluctuated sometimes, when I heard that Sasha was happy, I was happy, but when I heard that Sasha was almost captured by the hunters, I felt a wave of intense anger in my chest.

These emotions were foreign to me. I wondered how I could feel such strong emotions from a woman I just met, but stopping to think,... The same thing happened with Violet; I always felt very intense emotions when involving Violet.

I look at the blonde maid with murderous intent, but soon I shake

my head several times and start breathing heavily in an attempt to calm myself again; this wasn't my revenge, this was Sasha's revenge.

Okay, let's gather the important information, Sasha who is Violet's childhood friend was marked as my wife by the ritual that happened a few days ago. She came home and a trap set by the church hunters was waiting for her, on that day she lost Julia a maid who was like a mother to Sasha.

According to Kaguya, when she went to visit Sasha she realized she was suffering from bloodlust, and she was very weak from fighting the hunters. Realizing that Sasha might make rash decisions because of her desire for revenge, Kaguya kidnapped Sasha and brought her to me.

I understand the general situation, I look at Kaguya, "Who is my other wife?"

Kaguya bites her lip, but she soon sighs again and says, "Ruby... Ruby Scarlett, she's Lady Violet's other childhood friend."

Ruby... Ruby... Hmm, isn't she the most popular student in med school? Let me remember, red hair, green eyes, and with an always listless expression on her face, she was called a genius because she always came first in everything she did.

She was very popular with the college men, she was called the untouchable red flower. According to the rumors, in the past she was proposed to by several men but they were all turned down, and some more insistent men suddenly disappeared from the face of the Earth.

For some reason an irritating feeling grew in me when I realized that several men were after her, it was like an obsessive desire... Hmm, those fuckers-

"Lord Victor." Suddenly I hear Kaguya's voice.

I wake up from my thoughts and look at Kaguya, realizing that I

was falling into the seas of emotions again, I smile a little and say, "Thank you, Kaguya." I stroke her head harder.

I see she was breathing more erratically, and she had a small smile on her face, she wasn't breathing like Violet, it was something quieter.

"Nice job, Kaguya." I felt Kaguya's whole body tremble as I said those words, and soon she turns her face away and is looking at the wall as if she found something interesting.

Kaguya deserved those words, if she hadn't acted then, Sasha probably would have done something dangerous to herself.

"Ugh-...what happened to me?"

Suddenly, I hear someone's voice waking up, I look straight ahead and see that Sasha has woken up.

Sasha looks around and doesn't seem to recognize the place she woke up, suddenly she starts talking in an irritated tone, "... That maid! She kidnapped me—" She was going to continue to say something, but when she noticed my presence she stopped talking and focused all her attention on me.

Sasha's sapphire blue eyes begin to change to blood red, she inhales a large amount of air and slowly begins to release the air that was in her lungs. When she let out the air she breathed in, I could see that the air was much hotter than usual, it even formed a small hot mist when it came out of her mouth...

Her face started to turn red, and she started breathing erratically while keeping her red eyes fixed on me.

I wasn't in any better shape, my body was hot, my throat was dry, my whole body screamed at me to stop holding back and attack that woman and feast on her blood.

"Ugh-... Lord Victor, you're hurting me." Kaguya spoke in a neutral voice.

When Sasha and I heard Kaguya's voice, we both woke up from our stupor.

I looked down and realized I was squeezing Kaguya too hard, I also noticed that Kaguya lied by saying she was hurt, I think she told me and Sasha that to wake up from our world.

"...S-Sasha...Right?" I said stuttering a little.

"...Y-Yes, I'm Sasha!" She suddenly spoke out loud as she raised her hand like she was in elementary school and the teacher had asked her something.

Realizing what she had just done she turns her face to the side and ignores me, I noticed that her whole face was glowing red and seeing that expression of hers, something seems to pierce my heart and I can't help commenting in an honest tone:

"Beautiful."

I hear a 'poof' sound, and I see little yellow lightning flashing from Sasha's head, and her face is redder than before.

"S-stop... D-Don't look at me!" She screamed when she spoke the last sentence.

"Lady Sasha, please calm down," Kaguya said when she willingly walked away from me and approached Sasha.

"K-Kaguya, why did you bring me here!? I'm not prepared mentally, physically, or emotionally to talk to him right now!" She practically screamed with a face red with embarrassment.

Kaguya ignores what Sasha said, and says, "Lady Sasha, you were planning some silly plan like using this maid as bait and trying to capture the man who attacked you, right?"

Oh? That was also a possibility.

Sasha opens her eyes wide, she looked at Kaguya with a face that said 'how do you know that?' Looks like Kaguya nailed her guess.

Soon her face twists into hate, "Yes. So is this what you brought me here for? To stop me from taking my revenge?" She spoke in a cold tone.

"Wrong, I brought Lady Sasha here to strengthen herself," Kaguya spoke as she pointed her finger at me.

Sasha puts on a confused face then she looks at me, I notice her face turning a little red but she seems to control her expression now.

"Lady Violet is getting stronger... Every time Lady Violet drinks Victor's blood, she is slowly getting stronger, she's probably stronger than Lady Sasha and Lady Ruby now." Kaguya spoke in a suggestive tone.

"Do you understand? Violet is a noble vampire at just 21 years old, practically a newborn, and she's getting stronger." She continued to speak in the same suggestive tone.

"How is this possible? Vampires only get stronger the older they are, or if they train their skills to the fullest, just like Lady Scathach." Sasha spoke with a shocked face as she mentioned a woman I didn't know.

Suddenly Kaguya's face changes to an expression of disdain, and she sighs, "Sigh... Woman, are you deaf? I'm saying Violet is getting stronger by drinking Victor's blood."

Sasha and I looked at Kaguya in shock but then, as if it were all a lie, she came back with her stoic expression and spoke in a suggestive tone, "Does Lady Sasha understand what to do?"

"...Huh?" Sasha was so surprised by Kaguya's sudden change of

expression that she didn't hear anything.

"Tsk, Tsk," Kaguya clicked her tongue in annoyance. Suddenly Kaguya's body turns to darkness and she disappears into the ground then appears beside Sasha, she grabs Sasha by the arms and throws her towards me! Instinctively, I opened my arms and Sasha fell into my arms.

"Kyaa! What are you doing!?" Sasha yelled as she glared at Kaguya.

Kyaa? That was a cute scream, I can't help but comment as I hold Sasha's waist; she was my height, and she smelled really good, I can't help but smell her neck.

Kaguya bows in a gesture of respect and says, "Enjoy some time with your husband, Lady Sasha." Soon, she turns and walks towards the bedroom exit, and when she leaves the bedroom, she closes the door.

"Huh...?" She looked at Kaguya with an incredulous face, but she didn't have time to do much when she suddenly felt me sniffing her neck and holding her waist. I couldn't help it, when she got close to me, I couldn't hold out longer.

She turns quickly and looks at me and when our red eyes meet we couldn't control ourselves anymore. I see Sasha's teeth change and become sharper, she suddenly pushes me into the wall and tries to bite me, but I don't let her; I throw her to the ground and hold her arms while she wraps her legs around my waist and keeps staring at me with bloodlust.

I let go of her arms and she wraps her arms around my neck, I put my face to her neck, and then I bite her!

I also feel her bite my collarbone and start sucking my blood, suddenly an explosion of emotions and feelings are directed at me and, just like Violet, her blood was delicious!

If Violet's blood was like food made by the most renowned chef in the world, I think Sasha's blood taste the most natural? It was like I was living on an island in the middle of nowhere, and the boss of that island was a beast that had the most delicious meat in the world, it was a wild taste, it was an addictive taste!

As I drank Sasha's blood I could feel a weakened bond in my body start to get stronger, I could now 'feel and understand' Sasha's whole existence; her feelings, her thoughts, I could understand them just as I understood Violet... I understood what kind of woman Sasha is...

Suddenly my world turns red, I realize it's the same as Violet, but unlike Violet, I could look around; this place looked like the supermarket I went to in the past when my mom asked me to buy food.

"Are you sure?" Sasha asked as she looked at me who was lying down, I had a huge wound on my arm like I was being attacked by the claws of a wild animal.

"Yes, I will make him my 'Darling'," Violet spoke with a loving smile.

Sasha suddenly looks away and I follow her gaze, soon I see Ruby, a woman with long red hair, a voluptuous body, and green eyes, "What do you think about this?"

"No matter what I think, Violet won't change her mind, we should support her; besides, I already brought the materials for the ritual." Ruby spoke in a neutral tone as she pointed to a black bag that seemed to be full of various items.

Sasha nods her head in agreement with Ruby's words then she looks at me, and says with a bit of pity, "Well, you'd better live like a vampire than become a being who stinks of wet dog."

Soon the vision changes and I'm in the same building that I was

transformed in, everything happens the same as what I saw in Violet's vision, but now I see what happened after I bit Violet.

I looked at Ruby and disappeared, Ruby tried to react and defend herself but it seems like I was faster, I appear in front of Ruby and pull her into a hug, then I bite her neck.

"Ahh~~" Ruby moaned as she wrapped her arms around my neck then I see Ruby's gaze turn into a hot and dangerous look, she smiles with a smile full of sharp teeth and bites me!

"NOOOOO!" Violet yelled in a crazy voice.

Violet suddenly looks at Sasha, her eyes glowing red, "Run away from here now! Sasha! Run! NOW!"

Violet uses her speed and approaches me; appearing beside me, she tries to separate me from Ruby, but it seems I was stronger and she couldn't separate me from Ruby.

"Fuck!"

Sasha who was looking at Ruby and me with shocked eyes, looks at Violet who was trying to separate me from Ruby with a confused face, "Huh?" I could see she was genuinely confused.

"SASHA, RUN! NOW!" Violet ordered this time as the atmosphere around her grew heavier and more dangerous.

Lightning started to appear around Sasha and she tried to run away, but ...

Suddenly, I disappear and appear behind Sasha, I grab her from behind and bite her neck. "Ahh~~!" Sasha moans while holding my head, suddenly Sasha's eyes turn blood red; I stop biting Sasha and she turns to me with a distorted smile showing her sharp teeth, she licks my neck with a sensual gesture to clean the blood, and then bit me! I also bite her while hugging her tightly.

"BITCHES!!!" Violet screamed in rage as the atmosphere around her started to heat up, she was very angry, her face was distorted in rage, and she was biting her lip in frustration.

With a gesture of her hand, Violet creates several fireballs around it. "Die! Bitches!"

I stop biting Sasha, and look at Violet as I open my mouth to say something... I can't figure out what it is because the world around me has started to fall apart.

## Chapter 19: Sasha Fulger 2.

I wake up from the memories Sasha's blood bestowed on me and stop drinking her blood; when I realize my bloodlust has weakened, I grab Sasha around the waist and lift her up. Since she was holding me with her legs I could lift her easily, so I sat down on the floor and placed Sasha on my lap.

I start stroking Sasha's golden hair, patiently waiting for her to be satisfied; she seemed to be quite weak, and one thing I noticed is that no matter how much Sasha sucks my blood, I don't run out of blood or get tired. I think this is because of the vampire regeneration?

I noticed that when I started stroking Sasha's hair she started sucking my blood more slowly, and she also adjusted her position to sit more comfortably.

A few minutes pass and Sasha stops drinking my blood; she licks my neck a little to clean up the remaining blood, leans back, then looks at me while keeping her arms around my neck.

Seeing that some blood was still on her mouth, I approach her face gently; Sasha closes her eyes and accepts my advances as I start to lick her mouth, and slowly, I kiss her.

I feel her body tremble a little, but she accepts my kiss and opens her mouth.

Soon our tongues dance in each other's mouths for a few seconds, and then I pull away from her. She lets out warm air from her mouth as she looks at me with her red eyes, her breathing was erratic and she seemed to be out of breath as she looked at me.

Seeing her blond hair as I looked into her eyes, I couldn't help but think, 'She is so beautiful'.

Suddenly, I pull her head to my chest and start stroking her head.

"Mm~" She seemed to hold back a moan of satisfaction, I couldn't help but laugh and let out a relieved breath; I needed to calm down, "Do you know that... We just met?"

Sasha shivered slightly when she heard my words and I noticed her cheeks starting to get a little red; she looked really pretty. I picked up her hair that fell in her face and put it behind her ear, "...I-I'm not usually like that, it's because of the ritual...Yes! This is because of the ritual and because I was thirsty!"

She sat up and spoke to me with a serious face, her expression would be convincing if her face weren't so red.

I flashed a small smile and I pulled her head to my chest again, then continued to pet her.

A few minutes passed and we were just enjoying each other's presence. I didn't have to say anything, after all, just like me, she knew everything from my blood; even though we just meet each other now, we seemed to have known each other for a long time.

"Sigh..." Sasha sighed a little, then she pulled away from me and slowly straightened her position. Then she lay down with her head in my lap and looked up at me with her blood-red eyes.

When I saw this scene I had a sense of déjà vu; 'I remember doing the same thing with Violet', I thought.

Although with Violet, I was lying on her lap.

"You know? Vampires bond really fast," Sasha said.

"Oh?" I got curious and soon I started stroking Sasha's hair again.

"In our society, when a female vampire takes an interest in a male vampire the woman will chase the male trying to tie him up in marriage; it's the same with a male vampire who likes a female

vampire," Sasha said.

'A stalker society, huh?' I couldn't help but think.

Then she continues: "The same thing happened to my mother, she was the heiress of the Fulger family at the time, one fine day she saw my father, a blond vampire with blue eyes, and she became obsessed with him; the next day she kidnapped him and married him." Sasha spoke with a neutral face as she closes her eyes and enjoys my caresses.

"My father's family had a much lower status than my mother, and vampires by nature are greedy; because of that, my father didn't complain much when he was kidnapped."

Jesus Christ... Wait, isn't this situation somehow familiar? I couldn't help but think to myself.

"Fortunately my father was a noble vampire who had a stamina trait far above normal and when the two of them had a child... I was born. I got my mother's lightning bolt and my father's stamina, because of that, I can use my skills easily. If I only had my mother's lightning ability every time I used that power, I would be extremely debilitated, after all, the technique of my clan that uses lightning requires the vampire to have a strong body."

I didn't understand why she was telling me this, but I decided to listen in silence; she seemed to be venting her emotions.

"Just because I was born with better lightning resistance, my mom and dad treated me like a fun object to quench their boredom; they did a lot of experiments for me to improve lightning control," Sasha spoke as if telling the story of someone else; she didn't seem to mind the story, but I could tell by her tone of voice that she's sad.

"I went through a lot of 'training'. They put me in an electric chair and they tested my resistance to electricity, they threw me under the sea and asked me to use lightning skills to see if I would come out

alive; they used the excuse of 'training' to experiment on me to satiate their boredom. After all, I, as a noble vampire, have a much higher regeneration than normal... I went through a lot of 'training' and I almost died several times." She spoke the last phrase with a little pain.

"But I held on, I held on until these two lost interest in me, and they were bored again."

Suddenly, a wave of emotions started to flood my heart, these emotions weren't mine... I bit my lip, and I tried not to demonstrate anything.

"...And that was when I got my personal maid..." She bit her lip and put her arm over her eyes and said in a shaky voice: "Julia... She was like a mother to me, whenever I came home falling apart and almost dead, she would cure me and treat me like a real daughter..."

I saw drops of blood falling from Sasha's face; I feel these drops of blood falling on my thigh, but I didn't care. I bit my lip and tried to remain neutral; I was feeling my heart sink and I felt like crying; it was a strange feeling, I seemed to be feeling all her emotions.

"S-She taught me everything I know today, etiquette, education, the rules of the noble world, arithmetic, geography, vampire history... She even played with me using games created by humans, I really enjoyed playing chess with her. ...She was a mother to me, a mother like my real mother never was."

"I-I miss her~" I felt all the pain and sadness of Sasha when she spoke those words, her body was visibly shaking and she looked very fragile.

"...I-I miss her, I miss my mom..."

"I miss playing with her, I miss talking to her, I, I..." She bites her lip and can't speak anymore, I feel her body shaking. Now, she didn't look like a dangerous vampire, she just looked like a child who lost her mother.

I bit my lip as hard as I could and I felt the blood pouring from my mouth, but I ignored it; I did my best to keep a neutral expression as I gently stroked Sasha's hair, "You can cry Sasha," I said as gently as possible; I just wanted to lighten her burden a little.

"Mm," She turned her face to the left and hid her face in my lap as she started to cry silently. Not wanting her to hide what she's feeling, I lift her up and put her in my lap then I hold her. I place her head on my chest and she hides her face as I feel the tears of blood wetting my shirt.

I ignored it and was trying to do my best to control my emotions. I was mad at Sasha's parents for what they did to her.

I was sad that Sasha had lost someone who was like a mother to her. I was disgusted by Sasha's parents for using their daughter as an object to quench their boredom. I was sorry for Sasha for having to deal with everything that happened to her. And, I had immense respect for Julia and everything she did for Sasha.

I had a lot of emotions running through my heart and I wasn't managing to deal with all of those emotions at the same time. For the first time, I understood the difficulty of controlling a vampire's amplified emotions. I could feel everything multiplied by 500x, and that wasn't an easy task.

I bit my lip with my sharp teeth; I felt blood pouring from my mouth and the pain I was causing myself, but I didn't care. I hugged Sasha gently as I stroked her head, I didn't want to say anything like 'it's alright'; I didn't want to be a hypocrite with her. And because of that, I just decided to act as a support for her... Now, she just needs someone to vent her emotions.

Kaguya appears at the door and, seeing me hugging Sasha, she was going to open her mouth, but I just said: "Leave." My voice came out more demonic than I intended.

Kaguya's eyebrows quivered for a moment, but soon she nods

her head and leaves the room; I probably don't have a good expression right now.

...

Kaguya POV.

Some time passed, and I was going back to the room I left Lord Victor in with Lady Sasha. When I reached the front of the room, I opened the door, and just as my eyes meet Lord Victor's red eyes, I feel my whole body paralyze.

Lord Victor's face was very cold and I felt my instincts screaming from danger, I also noticed that he was biting his mouth very hard and he was hugging Sasha very protectively.

"Leave."

Hearing Lord Victor's order, I felt my whole body demanding as if I had to obey. It was like a primordial urge telling me that I shouldn't deny this order because, if I ignored it, something really bad would happen. Lord Victor's order is absolute; if he ordered me to do something, I must obey.

I nod in agreement, and immediately I leave the room. The moment I'm away from the room, I stop walking and regain my consciousness.

"W-What happened?" I couldn't help but ask aloud in shock as I looked towards the direction of the room where Lord Victor was.

...

A few minutes pass and Sasha stops crying, she looks at me with the face of a person who has just cried a lot.

"I'm sorry-" Before Sasha can say any nonsense, I put my finger to her mouth in a silent gesture, "Shh... Everything is fine... Everything is fine, okay?"

"Mm," Sasha nods her head and I bring my hand to her face; when she realizes my hand is on her face she puts her head in my hand. I laughed a little, and slowly started to wipe the bloody tears from her face.

"Weird...Why do I feel so safe with you?" She asked in a confused voice as she looked into my eyes, I could see her eyes had turned sapphire blue.

"I'm just built different," I said with a small smile.

She laughed a little when she saw my unintentional joke, but I also noticed that her emotions calmed down a little when she laughed. She seemed to be fine, I could feel her heart was serene, but I also felt immense anger hidden by all that serenity.

"Violet and I will help with your revenge," I said in a gentle tone.

She looks at me with a serious face, "I-"

"I know," I said with a small smile.

"Huh?" She made an expression showing she didn't understand.

"You want to avenge your mother alone, right? You would probably tell me not to meddle in your affairs." I chuckled a little when I saw her shocked expression.

"How-"

"How do I know this? It's simple, our connection told me." I spoke while laughing.

"But that's not the way the connection works! It was just supposed to share the couple's location like a GPS!" She practically screamed.

"Mine works different," I said laughing.

"You-"

"I know I'm not normal, but Violet knew that from the beginning, right?" I said with the same smile.

Sasha pouted, "Stop, please stop interrupting me." She looked so adorable now.

"Impossible" I replied.

"Wha-"

"Your troubled expression is too beautiful for me to stop doing that."

"..." Sasha turned her face away and tried to hide her embarrassed expression.

I stroke her head, but suddenly, I get up off the floor while holding her like a princess then I carry her to the bed and leave her there.

"Natalia," I called the blonde maid.

"Yes, Lord Victor?" Natalia appears from a secret passage.

"Make Sasha's accommodations, she'll live with us from now on."

"Impossible, we don't have enough space-" Natalia was going to continue, but I interrupted, I wanted Sasha around; someone has to keep an eye on her, or she'll screw up.

"The male vampires who are Violet's servants are supposed to stay in her mansion, or around my house. As long as Sasha lives with us, I only want the female vampires around her... Hmm, I remember there is a building for sale a block away... Use Violet's money and buy that building."

I don't want men living just a room away from Sasha, what if she's changing clothes and some of them see? Well, I know she'll probably

kill them, and so would I... But it's better to avoid casualties.

I sigh a little internally; I don't like to use my wife Violet's money. After all, that money isn't mine, but that's just my pride talking. (I think I should start the plan I had before; I need to make money. I'll start stealing but, in the future, I'll make my money legally within the government's laws, after all, money makes money; I just have to use it smartly.)

In some situations pride is useless...

I can easily ignore my pride if I can resolve a situation for my wives; if my pride is holding me back, I just have to throw my pride away.

My pride is worthless if it means my wife's well-being.

I just don't ignore my pride when the situation is something like Luan, he's my enemy. If he is my enemy, I must fight him!

I don't throw this pride away! And I also don't let anyone step on my pride.

My enemy is mine alone! I want to see his expression of despair, I want to see him slowly breaking down as I step on them~... This pride I don't give up.

"That's possible... The building is much cheaper than the defenses made by the witch June." Natalia spoke with a slightly surprised expression.

Hearing Natalia's words, I wake up from my stupor. I can't help but sigh internally; I lose control of my emotions too easily, is it because I'm still evolving? Normally, I don't let this sadistic side of me go; I stop thinking about bullshit and I say:

"Let Violet know that Sasha is moving in with us. I will also need to talk with my wife, she will be very angry, tell her to meet me."

"I think she won't do that," Natalia spoke with uncertainty.

"Oh, she will," I say with a small smile, then continue as I walk towards the exit of the room: "My wife is a jealous woman, and obsessed with me. She always puts my safety first and forgets of her own safety, she has the best qualities of a woman."

Soon I continued: "She is also a loving person, she is a kind woman, and she is very fond of Sasha who is her childhood friend; but her jealousy and obsession for me cloud her judgment"

"Lord Victor, I thought you didn't know about Lady Violet's personality," Natalia spoke a little surprised.

"Oh, I know her personality after all... She has the same personality as me." I commented with a small smile that Natalia couldn't see.

When Victor left the room, Sasha looked at Natalia and asked, "What happened?"

"Lord Victor is taking care of you," Natalia spoke in a neutral tone with a stoic expression, and she also thought internally:

'Upon contacting Sasha, Lord Victor let his real personality show a little. This took much longer than expected. Normally newborns show their true selves the moment they turn into vampires; I think Victor has great self-control and I'm a little curious what he's going to become when he can't hold back.

"Is he taking care of me...?" Sasha spoke with a strange expression, but soon after, she flashes a big, distorted smile. "I see, he's taken care of me." She put both hands on her face to hide her expression like a teenager in love and started laughing in a low voice, she lays down on the bed and hides her face in the pillow.

"..." Natalia just looked at Sasha with a stoic expression, it was like she was used to seeing this kind of demonstration before. 'Her

too, huh? Lady Violet's friends are very similar to her...'

...

## Chapter 20: Childhood friends.

As I was walking towards the vet to pick up my beloved cat Zack, I was thinking about what happened a few minutes ago... I was still a little in shock to find that I have two more wives, but for some reason.. I'm very happy, I mean... What man wouldn't want to have a harem?

Violet is interesting, I love her personality and she is very affectionate with me. And, even though I've just met Sasha now, I feel she was really cute and I really like seeing the way she changes when she gets embarrassed.

And Ruby... I haven't contacted her yet to get an opinion on her, but seeing her personality from the memories I got from Sasha, I think she must also have an interesting personality too.

I also know that having three wives with exotic personalities can be a very stressful thing, after all, I'm pretty sure problems will arise over time, although I don't mind those problems...

I think about how sad Sasha looked and can't help but clench my fist tightly. Seeing Sasha like that made me so angry, and at the same time baffled at myself; I only met her a few minutes ago and started liking her? That's impossible. But, when I remember the taste of her blood and the memories I got from drinking her blood, I can't help but feel close to her.

I remember the same thing happening with Violet. The moment I drank Violet's blood, I understood who 'Violet' was; it's a very difficult thing to explain that feeling, but I think vampire relationships work differently than humans. They are more aggressive with what they like and don't mind kidnapping the person they love to make them love them too... Although this is a very questionable attitude...

But one thing I was sure of is that Violet, Sasha, Ruby, and I were connected by blood, and I mean it in the most literal sense possible. I

thought about that moment when I could feel everything Sasha was feeling, I also knew her superficial thoughts for a moment.

Sasha and Violet told me how the ritual of turning someone into a vampire worked, and from the memories I absorbed of Sasha and Violet, I can tell that something went wrong with the ritual.

Violet said that my blood is special... RH Null Blood; the blood that caused me so much trouble and ironically gave me so many benefits when I became a vampire. I could be wrong, but I think my blood influenced the ritual somehow because, except for my blood, I'm not a special human, I'm just an ordinary human that can be found everywhere... Because of that thought, I decided that I need to learn more about the very ritual that made me what I am today, and only two beings know a lot about this ritual... The older vampires, and the witches...

Witches seem to be impossible to learn from about this, I'm sure with her greedy attitude they will ask me for something valuable, so I think I'll have to ask the older vampires.

"Sup, Victor." I hear a voice talking to me, but I ignore it and keep walking while in deep thoughts.

I was slowly getting used to people looking at me and whispering things like; Hey, isn't his skin too pale? Is he a foreigner? He is very handsome, his blue eyes are beautiful.

I'll be honest, these compliments boost my ego a little, after all, I've never received those compliments from other people, and getting those compliments from your mother isn't very trustworthy since, for the mother, the child is beautiful no matter what look is he born with ... Although I felt good when my mother praised me, after all, she is very honest; if she thinks I'm beautiful, she'll say I'm beautiful, but if she thinks I am I'm ugly, she'll say I'm ugly as honestly as ever.

Sometimes in the past, I received damage from my mom's honest words; I remember the day I wore a short green shirt and colorful

pants and asked my mom if I looked good, and as always she was honest in saying; You look like a clown who went to the circus to work and only wore the pants that were part of the uniform...

Ugh, just remembering that I still suffer damage...

"VICTOR!!" I heard someone screaming really loud in my ear and, with my new vampire senses, it was like someone had put a speaker on full volume near my ear and had screamed my name.

I quickly put a hand to my ear and look at whoever did it angrily.

Seeing that the man who did this to me was my childhood friend, I practically screamed. "You fucking idiot! Why did you do that!?"

"Bruh, I've been calling you since like 10 minutes ago and you weren't talking to me! Are you ignoring me!?" He asked with his usual gentle smile.

A man with spiky blond hair and eyes like a green sapphire, he had an asymmetrical V-shaped face with a gentle smile and a body toned from sports, he was tall at 185 cm in height.

He was my childhood friend Andrew Walter. It's been a while since I've seen this idiot; wasn't he traveling with his mother or something? Thinking about the appearance of Andrew's mother, I can't help but shake my head several times to get the thought out of my head.

Don't think of your friend's mother that way! Don't break the brothers' code of conduct!

The brothers' code of conduct was something my friends and I created and the code was simple: don't date your friend's ex-girlfriends, don't date your friend's mother or sister, and most importantly don't date your friend's current girlfriend.

Why did we create this? Well, I'm fully aware that my mom is

beautiful; I know that with her personality it's almost impossible for her to cheat on my dad, but it's good to guarantee, right? Andrew's mother is also a very beautiful woman, and my other friend Edward's sister was very beautiful too; so to prevent our friendship from falling apart because of reasons like dating a friend's mother or sister, we made this code.

He starts looking at me with questioning eyes, he looks me up and down as if he's sizing me up, then he nods to himself as if he understands what happened. "Did you take any kind of medicine those athletes use? Hmm... What's the name again?" He puts a hand to his chin as if he's thinking.

"Anabolics?" I spoke while looking at him.

"Yes! That's right! Did you take that? Dude, don't do this, I know you were bothered with your body but those meds only make your health worse! I'll tell your mother!" He said with that last part sounding like a child who caught his friend doing something wrong and said he was going to tell their mother.

"I didn't take those!" I practically screamed.

"...It's okay, you can be honest with your friend." He spoke as he touched my shoulder with a look that would understand me.

This man really makes me angry sometimes, "I didn't take anything, this is just puberty." I used the same excuse I used for my mom.

He looked at me like I was an idiot and said, "Bullshit."

Of course, he wouldn't believe it... I also know this excuse is ridiculous.

"Puberty doesn't make a human grow taller, build toned muscle, and make you look the same as Captain America!"

... Well, he's right.

"If puberty did that, the world would be full of people with superhuman physiques! Stop the bullshit and tell me the truth!"

Ugh... I think of an excuse to change the subject, soon something comes to mind, "I have a wife now."

He looks at me with a shocked face, "I don't believe you." He spoke in a dry, honest tone.

I just looked at him with a dead stare, he knows I'm like my mother and I'm very honest with close people; living 21 years with a mother who speaks all she thinks can influence you in some way.

"...It's a lie, right? Right!?" He looked at me with eyes begging that it was a lie.

"Dude, I'm married now," I said honestly.

"... I do not believe it! After all, you're not wearing a wedding ring! What kind of man marries and doesn't wear a wedding ring? Are you already cheating on your wife!?"

Bruh. Decide whether you believe me or not... Sigh, what a troubled man.

"It's true, I'm married, but things happened too quickly and I couldn't prepare a wedding ring or anything. Anyway, seeya!" I said goodbye to him.

"Huh!? Wait! I'll go with you!"

I stopped walking and looked at him, "You don't even know where I'm going and you're going to follow me? What if I'm going somewhere illegal?"

"That matters? If you're going somewhere illegal, I'll go with you; it must be fun there, right? I can't let you go alone in this place, of

course when this is all over, I'll tell your mother."

"...." This man is a good friend, but for some reason, he's always ratting on me to my mother... Wait...

I look at him dead-eyed, "If you chase after my mom, I'll go after your mom too! Are you listening to me!?" I threatened him.

He looks at me with a look like he doesn't believe what I said, "Dude, you know I respect your mother a lot, after all, she helped me with a problem in the past involving my father and I remember the code. I wouldn't do something like that."

"Good," I think I'm satisfied, I know he wouldn't do that and I also know he respects my mother a lot since she was their family advocate when his worthless father wanted custody of Andrew.

"And I don't like married women either, they are troublesome, and I don't want to die from a stray bullet by a man I put a green hat on." He spoke with a gentle smile.

"You speak as if you have experience of your own..." I looked at him suspiciously.

I saw his smile break for a moment, then he said, "I use my right to remain silent, we are in a free country!"

"... Dude, you're going to die one of these days, you better stop it." I gave a piece of advice.

"I know, I did this when I was 20 years old, I stopped doing this after what happened in the past."

'You are only 21 years old! Don't talk like this is in the distant past!' I commented internally.

"Oh, well... Was she pretty?" I couldn't help but ask curious as I started walking towards the vet, I also noticed he started following me.

"Yes, she was 32 years old, curvy body with dark black hair; she lived in New York and she was from a wealthy family, but her husband was a 66-year-old man, I think she was frustrated because her husband didn't satisfy her."

"Oh, the pattern, huh?"

"Indeed," He spoke.

"...Somehow, I feel sorry for the guy," I commented a little sympathetically.

"Oh? Own experience? Dude, you just got married and you're already taking your wife's greenhorn!?"

"Fuck off!"

He laughed out loud, I had a small smile too, even though he's an annoying friend at times, he was a good friend; I've known him since I was a kid too.

"Well, I know with your personality, you would probably kill the guy and your wife if you found out you were being cheated on." He commented casually like it was no big deal.

"Hey, if that happens I won't stop it, but I won't let you kill yourself. After all, you're my friend, I think I should make a plan in case this happens in the future, maybe save money and buy a passport abroad? Maybe Brazil? I heard the politicians there are very corrupt, and in exchange for a few dollars, they would help you easily." He began to monologue out loud.

"Stop thinking nonsense, that will never happen," I said, after all, knowing Violet's personality, it's impossible for that to happen.

"Okay, but I'll still make the plan."

"Alright." I accepted, I know it's no use talking anymore now; he's always like that. He's very careful, I think what happened in the past

with his father affected him a lot.

...

Looking at a small establishment in front of me, I nod to myself, this is the right place.

When I entered the establishment the first thing I saw was my cat, Zack, sitting at the counter and looking around in surveillance.

I looked at my cat, he is furry black with a patch of fur around his chest and neck that is pinkish-white in color; his head fur was also very spiky and he has short ears with less black and more dark brown fur. On the outside, his eyes were pool blue and had a black slit in the middle, typical of cats, but my cat's eyes were the cutest of all, cough, okay, maybe not. But I think so, so it's true. He had a cat's whiskers, of course, nearly ten strands of white on each side.

"Sup, Zack. How are you?" I spoke out loud, the few customers who were picking up their pets looked at me with confused eyes, probably thinking I was crazy or something, but soon something happens that surprises everyone.

Zack looks at me and raises his paw, "Meow."

Umu, I nod at myself satisfied, and I smiled a little when I saw the customers look at the shocked cat.

"As always, your cat looks more like a dog than a cat; I don't like cats, but I wouldn't mind adopting him."

"Never! And cats are the best, they are silent, quiet, and affectionate making them the best animal there is!"

"Meow!" Zack meowed at me like he was agreeing.

"See? Even he agrees!"

"Whatever," Andrew doesn't even try to argue, so he turns his

face and looks at a 21-year-old woman who was wearing a doctor's coat.

"Oh, Victor, and...Andrew." She spoke Andrew's name angrily.

## Chapter 21: Andrew, Edward, and Leona.

I look at the woman who is my friend's sister.

She has pure white hair, bright blue eyes, and a slim body with skin like she's lacking blood; she's not pale like me, she's more like an albino. And, she was born with this physical condition too, she was also tall at 180 cm.

As she has no skin pigmentation her skin is very sensitive to the sun and, because of that, she rarely leaves the store or her house and only goes out at night.

Her name was Leona Elizabeth Lykos.

Normally, I would suspect she would be a vampire, but she isn't, I know that because I've seen her eat regular food and I know vampires can't eat foods other than blood.

Even though Violet sometimes forgets about it and asks to learn how to cook with my mom, I think she was just excited?

I walk over to my cat and start petting him, and as usual, he starts to purr contentedly, and then he lies down on the counter and spreads his legs as if asking me to stroke his stomach.

Leona approaches me and I also see Andrew walking away and sitting in the chair away from the counter, he seemed to be waiting for me. I think he doesn't want to talk to Leona?

Well, I don't judge him, what he did in the past must have hurt Leona, because of that, he's just being considerate.

"Why is your cat just like that to you? When I try to caress him, he starts growling at me." Leona spoke with a pout as she stopped and looked at me like she was sizing me up, I feel her looking me up and

down.

"Well, he is my cat?" I spoke.

"Meow!" Zack meowed in agreement.

"You've changed..." Leona spoke as she looked at me...

"Yes, you too," I said honestly. After all, I noticed her skin was better than in the past, I think living in isolation helped her?

"..." Leona remains silent, and I see her continue to stare at me.

I look at her confused; I know I've changed, but does she need to stare at me like she's seeing a rare animal?

"Hmm, how is Zack's health?"

Suddenly, she stopped staring at me and looked at Zack, "He's fine."

"Really? But he was meowing a lot earlier." I remember I couldn't sleep because he kept meowing like he was dying or something.

"...well, he was horny"

"...Huh?" I looked at Zack, seeing the chubby fluffy cat staring at me with a satisfied look, I found it so cute that I started stroking more. "You mean he was in heat?"

"Meow, Meow!" He purred contentedly.

"Yes. Because of that, he was meowing a lot, wouldn't you consider neutering him? Since you are my childhood friend, I'll give you a good price."

Zack suddenly gets up from the counter and looks at Leona with a Glare like he's looking at his greatest enemy, he's even growling a little.

"He didn't like that idea very much." I chuckled as I looked at Leona who was looking at Zack in shock.

"He's very smart." She praised him.

"Yes," I said nodding my head, then I answer her question, "I won't castrate him, after all, as a man, I understand Zack; he still wants to have kids, right? Buddy?"

"Meow." Zack meowed as if he was agreeing, then he jumps on my shirt and slowly climbs up my shirt, over my shoulder, then he hangs on my shoulder; this is something he did a lot when he was younger. After all, I've raised him since he was very young, and he always liked to be on my shoulder for some reason.

As my shoulder was wider than before, he could easily find a comfortable position.

"Isn't he acting like a monkey?" Leona spoke a little surprised.

Zack looked at Leona and started growling at her, he really didn't like her, huh?

"Ugh, I feel offended; all animals like me and, because of this gift, I created this store. But, why doesn't he like me?! He's so cute, I wanted to hug him!" She spoke with a pout.

I just laugh a little, and I found Leona's expression cute, when I was going to say something, I heard:

"Oh? Victor, long time no see." I look at the store entrance.

And soon I see a tall man walking in, he is 195 cm tall, with a toned body, platinum blond hair, and blue eyes like Leona; he was Leona's brother.

Edward Jonathan Lykos, he was also my former personal trainer. In the past, he worked as a fitness trainer, but he suddenly decided to change jobs and now he owns a bar.

He is also the man who trained me in martial arts in the past, although I couldn't learn much because of my physical limitation, I just learned how to defend myself. Techniques like kicking a man's most precious organ, using a stun gun... Come to think of it, this was training for frail women, huh?

"Sup, Ed, do you still shine in the sun when you walk down the street?"

"Ugh. Can you forget about this boring joke? Because of that vampire movie, every Edward on the planet is now suffering from that joke." He spoke in annoyance.

I laughed a little and said, "I'm kidding, how are things going?"

"It's ok, I've finished building my bar's leisure area, you can go there if you want, remember I only open at night." He spoke as he closed the door and walked towards the counter.

"I see, I will visit sometime."

"Brother, did you finish the order I requested?" Leona asked.

"Yes, that was an easy thing."

"Good," Leona nods satisfied, and goes to meet a customer who has entered the store.

I see Andrew approaching, and then he says, "Yo, Ed. How are you doing?"

"I'm fine," Edward looks at Andrew, "Is my sister still mad at you?"

"Yes...Honestly, I didn't know that woman was her only friend, if I knew I wouldn't have approached her." Andrew spoke with an apologetic face.

In the past, Leona was bullied because of her looks and as she

always hung around with Andrew, who was a cute boy, and my other friend Fred, she ended up earning free hate from the girls at school.

She also hung around with me in the past, but I was pretty much a non-existent being to the girls at school. After all, I was thin and I looked really sick, I think I got along with Leona because of these similarities.

Fortunately, her brother never let the bullying escalate, since he was a veteran at the time, and he protected his sister tooth and nail. He even beat up a student who hurt his sister... How can I say, I respect him a lot; he doesn't care if they're a woman or a man, his fists have true gender equality...

Although this incident was a big problem in the past, he almost got arrested, luckily he had the support of my mother who was a renowned lawyer; if not for my mother, and his father who was a teacher at the school in the past, he would be behind bars now.

A good side of this story is that bullying stopped happening, after all, the girls were afraid of Edward.

But it's not all flowers, because of this incident, Leona couldn't make friends near the area where she lived, and the only friend she had used to date Andrew.

And Andrew cheated on Leona's friend with an older woman...

Because of that, Leona is angry with Andrew.

"You don't need to worry too much, one day she will forgive you, you are good friends after all," Edward spoke with a gentle smile.

"Ugh, stop lying, I know her as well as you do, I know she's spiteful," Andrew said.

"Indeed." Edward nodded his head in agreement.

"Meow." Zack meowed in agreement as well.

Edward looks at Zack for a while, then he looks at me. "Hmm, have you grown up?"

"You just now that noticed, brother?" Leona who finished serving the customer said, now that there were no customers in the store, she could participate in the conversation more actively.

"Ugh, how am I going to figure that out? He was always the shortest of the group."

"Oof," I made a gesture like I was being pierced by an arrow through the heart.

"Brother, you don't have to be rude!"

"It's okay, I also know that I was short, I was even shorter than Leona..." I commented a little depressed.

"Hmm, your muscles are defined too, how did you get that muscle?" He asked curiously.

"Well, I followed the training you went through and some videos on the internet." The lies are getting more absurd as time goes by, it's pretty obvious they're suspicious, they just don't ask too much because they respect my privacy.

"Oh, you're not on steroids, are you?"

"Of course not, I know what it does to the body," I replied.

I take Zack off my shoulder and place him on the counter, then stop stroking him. Zack meowed at me annoyed, but I ignored him, he seemed to snort for a few seconds and then started walking around the establishment.

"Hmm" Suddenly, Edward puts his hand on his chin and looks at me:

"Are you still being bullied?" He asked in a neutral tone.

Leona and Andrew look at me, Leona looked worried, and Andrew looked angry.

"I'm not being bullied anymore, I resolved that situation yesterday," I spoke with a big smile on my face.

I saw Leona's body shake a little, and Andrew just kept looking at me.

"I heard, you dealt with him using a basketball game," Edward said.

"I heard you jumped from the middle of the court and made a dunk." He continued as he looked at me with suspicious eyes.

"..." I remained silent, after all, I wasn't making an effort to hide the changes in my body, I didn't want to hide them either.

"Well, no need to feel pressured, we all have secrets we want to hide, I'm just upset you didn't want us to get involved in this situation," Edward spoke with a gentle smile.

"Yes! I wanted to hit that bastard!" Andrew spoke.

"Yes, bullying is unforgivable," Leona said.

I look at Andrew, "I appreciate you guys caring about me, but you know me, right?"

I looked at my friends with a big smile on my face: "Luan is mine! Just mine! I will not allow anyone to get involved in this, he is someone who hurt me and insulted my mother; this grudge can only be washed away by me, this is my pride!" Only I'm allowed to step on and break Luan, I won't be satisfied otherwise.

My friends may call me a fool, or an idiot, but I don't care; I will not allow my enemies to be destroyed by anyone other than me!

"Sigh, I understand you, you have your pride as a man and I respect that but don't go overboard, okay? I don't want to see you arrested," Edward said and advised me.

"Indeed, if you are arrested, please know that I have a plan for you to flee to Brazil, although that plan is still in progress," Andrew spoke.

"You are fools! Why don't you just help him!?" Leona practically screamed out loud.

Andrew and Edward looked at Leona.

Edward said, "He didn't ask for help, and I respect his pride, as a man, I can understand his feelings."

Andrew said, "Victor is my friend, and he knows his limits, if he needs help, he knows he can count on us; if he didn't ask for help, I won't interfere."

"...You guys are just idiots!" Leona snorted.

"You wouldn't understand," Edward said and Andrew nodded.

"Yes, Yes. I don't understand because I'm a woman, right?" Leona spoke irritably.

"Wrong, you don't understand why because you never tried to fight people who bullied you," Edward spoke in a hard tone.

"I was weaker, and they-" Leona tried to say something, but Edward cut her off:

"You know I'm not talking about that... There is a big difference between accepting bullying and fighting it. The attitude of how you deal with bullying is what matters, you never decided to ask for help, and you never talked about it! You just put up with everything silently!" Edward spoke raising his voice a little.

"..." Leona looked shocked at her brother.

He sighs and says, "Unlike you, Victor never accepted bullying and warned us what was happening to him, and he told us that he was going to solve it somehow."

"Indeed," Andrew continues ignoring Leona's gaze: "Although we trusted Victor, we were always on the lookout for something to get out of hand, we respected Victor's pride and decision, but that doesn't mean we stood still while our friend was beaten," He said smiling, it seems they did something I didn't know.

I really have good friends... I thought with a happy smile on my face, seeing Leona's sad look I say, "Don't think about it too much, Leona."

"Huh?"

"Everyone handles a situation differently, I'm different from you, and you're different from your brother. You don't need to push yourself so hard."

I approach Leona and patted her head a little: "You just need to do things your way, okay? And if you need help with something, you can count on me, your brother, Andrew, and Fred."

"Mm," Leona lowers her head, and I see her face turn a little red. As her skin was very white, her embarrassment became quite noticeable... Fuck, I wasn't supposed to do this, I need to control this hand of mine; I have become very used to stroking women's heads.

I look at Edward and see his bloodthirsty look, he was warning me of the code! I quickly pull away from Leona, for a moment I see her pouting as she glares at her brother in annoyance.

"Hahaha, Victor was always good with words," Andrew chuckled, then he continued, "Oh I hear he's married."

"...Huh?" Leona and Edward looked at me in shock.

## Chapter 22: Yanderes... Means problems.

"...huh? You're married, Victor?" Edward spoke as he looked at me with a shocked face.

"Yes," I answered honestly.

Edward's gaze shifted to a look as if I'd made the biggest mistake of my life...

"Marriage is not a good thing, Victor... But if you're happy, I'm supportive." He spoke while shaking a little, he seemed to remember bad things from the past.

"Pfft," Andrew started to laugh.

I looked at Andrew who was laughing, "Stop laughing! And why did he react that way?" I asked.

He held back his laugh and said, "Oh, you didn't know, right? A few years ago, Edward tried to marry a woman, but she was the jealous and stalking type and, because of that, he has emotional scars from what happened."

I see Edward shiver a little when he hears Andrew talk about what happened.

"But aren't they the best women?" I replied without understanding.

"Huh?"

"Huh?"

"Meow?" Even Zack, who was a little distant, meowed aloud.

I looked confused at Andrew and Edward who were looking at me as if they had seen an exotic creature.

Edward puts his hand to his face like he has a headache, and asks me, "Do you have a head problem?"

"Huh?" Now I was the one who didn't understand.

"From the expression, he's making it's obvious that he really doesn't understand his problem," Andrew spoke as Edward nodded.

Then Edward speaks, "Listen, Victor. Jealous and stalking women are the worst kind of women. Don't go near them, or you'll get killed!"

"I don't understand what you're saying, if you accept her feelings won't everything be okay? Why should I care?" I asked really confused.

"...."

They were silently looking at me with their mouths open in shock.

"He's a lost cause... Come to think of it, he's always been like that, huh? He always picked the craziest women." Andrew spoke as if thinking of the past.

"Coming to think of it... That's true," Edward said, then he continued, "Has he never heard that he should never date a crazy woman?"

"Wait!" Leona suddenly screamed as she looked at Edward and Andrew.

"Are you just going to ignore that he just said he got married!?" she spoke as she knocked on the table.

"Oh, that's true," Edward said.

"Who is your wife? Do you have a picture of her?" Andrew asked and, hearing Andrew's question, Leona and Edward looked at me.

"Hmm, I do," Actually, I had pictures of Violet and Sasha. I didn't

take these pictures, it seems like Natalia was making a photo album or something, so, she took some pictures and sent me to my phone.

I never understood this maid, she always seems to be hidden, but when I call her she always appears; she is like a ghost...

I pull out my cell phone and show Violet's photo.

Andrew whistled: "She's hot-"

I looked at Andrew with an emotionless expression. "Keep talking... And I promise you tomorrow you'll wake up in New York Bay, I bet the fish will love to eat you."

I saw Andrew's body shake a little, he replied. "It's just a joke, and you wouldn't do it, right?"

I keep looking at him with an emotionless gaze.

"Right?" I saw Andrew's expression darken a little in fear.

"You know I always keep my promises," I said in a dry tone. To be honest, I wouldn't do that, he's a good friend and I wouldn't kill my friend just for that; but he would get hit a little.

Edward touched Andrew's shoulder and said, "Remember the Brothers code."

"Yes, I know," Andrew said in a serious tone.

"Victor wouldn't dump you in New York Bay, but he would probably hit you, and I think he's more capable of defending himself with his current body," Edward continued.

Suddenly, Leona appears in front of me and takes my cell phone, I look at her confused, then she flips the image to the side and sees Sasha's photo.

"Who is she?" She asked in a neutral tone.

"Oh, she's my second wife."

"..."

My three friends look at me with the most shocked face I've ever seen in my life, if this was an anime I bet their mouths would be on the ground by now.

"Hold the balls of the donkey!" Andrew practically yelled, he approaches Leona and looks at the image of Sasha on the phone.

I see Leona's eyebrow twitch a little in annoyance, but she's silent.

I see Edward approaching, and he also sees Sasha's photo.

"Hmm, I don't know how to react to that, when did you become a chad?" Edward spoke in a tired tone.

I see my cat climbing on Edward's shoulder and looking at Sasha's picture, then he looks at me and meows as he raises his paw: "Meow."

He seemed to be praising me or something.

"W-Wait," Leona looked quite shaken, she looks at me and asks, "Do they know about each other!?"

"Yes, of course," I replied.

"..."

"Damn, Victor... You made quite a catch, I never thought I would say that, but I'm proud of you." Edward spoke as he held back the tears from his eyes; somehow I could tell he was jealous, but at the same time, he was scared.

"Ed, you don't understand! You know our friend here, right? Do you think he's a man to chase after another woman if he's married!?"

He's not me!" Andrew practically screamed.

Bruh, you mustn't say that about yourself with pride.

"Coming to think about it, you're right," Edward said.

"Yes, Victor is a very loyal man," Leona said and the three looked at me.

"Well, to be honest, they're the ones who came after me," I replied with a happy little smile.

"..."

The three of them look at me with dead fish eyes, Leona said, "You know you can't marry more than one person in this country, right?"

"I know." I nod my head in agreement, but human law means nothing to vampires.

"Question." Andrew raised his hand like he was a child who wanted to ask the teacher a question.

"What?"

"Do your wives get angry when other women approach you? Do they suddenly have tantrums? Are they very jealous?"

I look at Andrew shocked, "How did you know that?"

"Bruh," Andrew replied, he looked at Edward and Leona, "Now everything makes sense."

Edward nodded and he looks at me with a dead fish look, "RIP, Buddy... I think soon, we'll be going to your funeral."

"Huh!?"

"Brother, don't gamble on Victor!" Leona spoke irritated, then she continued, "What if he really dies!?"

"Why are you thinking I'm going to die?" I asked as soon all my friends looked at me in shock even my cat looked at me.

"You're dating two Yanderes, buddy..." Andrew said.

"Yandere?" I questioned the word I didn't know.

"Do you remember that pink-haired girl anime that we watched in our teens?"

"Oh, I remember I thought she was pretty at the time, what about her?" I asked.

I saw Edward, Leona, and Andrew's faces tremble as they heard my words.

"She is a yandere."

"I see... And you're saying my wives are just like her?"

"Yes."

"Isn't that a good thing?" I blurted out, after all, I don't know what the word 'yandere' means, but Violet and Sasha are adorable, and that's all that matters.

"...."

Sigh! Sigh! Sigh!

The three sighed at the same time, and it looks like they've given up on something.

"Just don't die, okay? And don't cheat on your wives, or you'll die"

"I would never do that, why should I cheat on my wives if I have

such beautiful wives?"

"Sigh, if you didn't have a screw loose in your head, you'd be a good man." Leona sighed.

Edward looked at his sister with serious eyes. "I won't allow it! Absolutely not! You'll never get married while I'm alive!"

"Brother!" Leona cried out in embarrassment.

"There's Edward Siskon," Andrew said laughing.

"Siskon?" I asked confused.

Leona, Andrew, and Edward looked at me as if I had done something wrong.

Andrew says, "You're an uncultured man, buddy. We need to sort this out."

"Huh!?"

"Well don't judge him too much, he's a movie man; I remember his dad likes watching movies, he must have been influenced." Leona helped me.

"Heretic," Edward said.

"Coming to think about it, he's only watched two animes in his life, huh?" Andrew spoke.

"Unforgivable," Edward said.

"Hmm, it was the one anime with the alien that gets stronger and his hair changes color, and the pink-haired Yandere's anime," Leona said.

"Yes, I remember you recommended it to him at the time," Andrew said.

"Indeed." Leona nodded.

Suddenly, my cell phone started ringing, Leona looks at my cell phone and says, "Kaguya?"

"Oh, she's my wife's maid."

"M-Maid...?" Leona spoke in a stutter.

I hold out my hand and Leona nods as she hands me the cell.

I answer my cell phone and start talking to Kaguya.

While Victor was on the phone talking to Kaguya, his friends were whispering in a not-so-low voice.

"Did he just say M-Maid?" Leona spoke.

"Why are you stuttering?" Andrew asked curiously.

"Idiot, hiring a maid is expensive, did you know?" Leona spoke.

"Oh, I didn't know," Andrew said.

"I think his wife is rich," Edward deduced.

"Isn't he very lucky?" Andrew can't help but speak out loud.

Leona and Edward look at Andrew confused.

Andrew begins to explain, "He married two wives, and one of those wives is rich, and both wives are beautiful."

"Oh, you're right, but it's not all flowers, they're yanderes, you know? He could die at any time," Edward explained as he shivered a little.

"Hmm, I think Victor will be fine," Leona said, now that she was calmer, she could think better about the whole situation.

"What do you mean?" Edward asked.

"Remember how Victor's personality is, he may not realize it, but he knows how to treat a woman well. I think his mother's teachings influenced him without him realizing it and he became a natural playboy." Leona would never say that the headpats Victor gave were good too, she would never speak it out loud! Never!

"And he doesn't refuse Yandere's advances, so I think he's safe? The protagonists only die in the anime because he refused women's advances, after all, most of these protagonists were beta men." Leona said.

"Hmm, you're right," Andrew said.

"Victor likes crazy women, huh?" Edward spoke out loud, he looked confused.

"Just in case, I'll keep in touch with a friend of mine from the police, after all, stalking is a criminal act," Andrew said.

"Oh, now that I think of it, in real life the act of stalking someone is a crime," Leona said.

"Leona, you are watching too many animes," Edward scolded her lightly.

"Brother, I can't leave the house because of my skin, what do you think I should do? Look for a boyfriend?"

"Absolutely not! I will buy more animes for you! So stay home!"

"Humpf," Leona huffed and turned her face away, but Andrew could see she had a smile as if it was all part of her plan.

Victor ended his call and said, "I'm going home."

I look at Zack and say, "Hey, Zack. Let's go, buddy."

"Meow," Zack who was lying on a chair gets up, walks slowly towards me, and climbs on my shoulder then I put my hand behind to hold him, and he lies down on my shoulder.

"...Are you absolutely sure he's not a dog? Or a monkey? How can a cat be so smart?" Leona asked in disbelief, I also see Andrew and Edward nodding.

"He's normal, he's just used to being that way, after all, I've raised him from a young age," I replied.

"..." Leona is silent and decides not to argue anymore, she just sighs as if she had given up on something.

Edward looks at me, "What happened? You look happy,"

"Oh my wife met my other wife today, because of that I'm happy," I answered honestly.

My three friends look at me with dark faces and I realize Edward was shaking a little too.

"Two Yandere will meet..." Andrew swallows hard, and sighs as he looks at me with respect, "How can I say, Victor you are a man among men."

"Thanks?" I reply, confused.

"Anyway, I'll see you guys later." I spoke as I turned around

"Bye, Victor. Try not to die, Buddy," Edward said.

"Take care of yourself, Victor," Andrew said, he looked like he wasn't going to follow me anymore.

Leona didn't say anything, she just waved at me.

## Chapter 23: Violet and Sasha meet.

"Tell me, Zack," I said to my cat as I walked towards my house. I noticed people's eyes on me; It's like think they've never seen a cat in their life.

Even though my cat doesn't speak, I can deduce or imagine what he says, after all, he is a smart cat.

Currently, Zack was on my shoulder as he looked around curiously.

"Meow?" Zack meowed curiously.

After living so long with my cat, I was able to differentiate his every meow; his being so smart helps a little too.

"Did Leona treat you well?" I asked as I walked.

"Meow! Meow! Meow...!" Translation: She treated me well, but she bathed me!! I hate that woman!

"Oh, I see. I know you don't like to shower, but you can't go without a shower; what if your fur falls out and you go bald like a rat?"

"Meow..." Translation: Make sense...

"See? I know you don't like to shower, but a shower every week isn't too bad, right?" I spoke with a smile on my face.

I look over my shoulder and see Zack staring at me with a horrified look; he seems to have heard something scary.

"Three baths a month?" I tried to negotiate.

"Meow!" Translation: one bath a month!

"Two baths a month, that's not negotiable," I said.

"Meow! Meow! Meow! Meow!" Translation: Tyranny! I demand democracy! We live in a free country! Even cats have rights!

"Sigh, Zack, if you were a quiet cat I'd agree to a bath a month, but you go out a lot for walks and when you come home you're all dirty," I spoke.

"Meow... Meow." Translation: But... You're right.

"Now that I stop to think, what do you do on your walks?" I asked curiously while ignoring people looking at me openmouthed or commenting if I was crazy or not.

"Meow! Meow, Meow...!" Translation: I'm going after the female cats! They love me, even though there are other cats...!

"Oh? Didn't you fight for dominance?" I asked while raising an eyebrow.

"Meow, Meow, Meow, Meow!" Translation: Of course I fought, I used that technique called the 'T' pose that you taught me. Using this technique, I asserted my dominance and now I have four wives!

"That's my boy!" I said laughing as I took him off my shoulder and carried him like a baby while stroking his stomach.

"Meow~, Meow." Translation: Kimochi~... You are very good at this.

Huh? Why did the first word come out in Japanese? Am I imagining it wrong? Looking up into my cat's satisfied face, I shrug like I don't care, then put him on my shoulder again.

...

Arriving at my house, I open the door and enter.

"I came back and brought Zack with me," I spoke out loud.

"Meow, Meow, Meow!!" Translation: Sup, bitches, I'm home!

"Zaaaaaaaack!" I hear my mom screaming as she runs towards me. I see Zack's fur rises, and he quickly jumps off my shoulder and falls to the ground then he runs away from my mom.

"Hey! Don't run away from me, Zack! Get back here right now!" My mom yelled as she looked at Zack who ran up onto the couch.

"Meow!" Translation: Never!

Ignoring my mom and Zack's banter, I walk towards the basement stealthily. When I first enter the basement, I see what my old basement looks like but, when I put my foot on the first step, I see a little magic circle appearing, and soon the basement changes.

Witch technology is very useful...

"Kaguya, what are you doing!? Let me kill that bitch!" I heard Violet's voice.

"I'm sorry, Lady Violet, but I can't let you do something you'll regret," Kaguya spoke in a neutral tone.

Well, looks like I made it on time.

I walk towards the room Sasha was in and, when I open the bedroom door, I see a rather surprising scene.

Kaguya was holding Violet on the ground with a Jiu-jitsu technique called a rear-naked choke, a little far from Kaguya was Natalia who was just watching everything as usual.

Sasha was watching everything with a neutral gaze. Currently, she was sitting on the bed and beside her was Maria, her personal maid who was a former hunter.

Violet looked quite startling, her face was distorted with hatred and she was glaring at Sasha with her red eyes gleaming with killing intent.

I realized Violet was trying to use her powers, but Kaguya was smothering her before she could concentrate on using them.

As expected from an older vampire, she managed to immobilize Violet easily... I guess it wasn't that easy... Looking more closely, I realize that Kaguya is trying very hard to hold Violet down.

"Yo," I said with a smile on my face.

Suddenly, all the women in the room look at me.

My wife Violet's killing intent seems to explode when she sees me, "Victor!" She didn't call me darling as usual.

I look at Kaguya and nod my head indicating for her to let go of Violet, she looks at me with a face that asked if I was sure; I close my eyes and nod my head as I smile.

Violet suddenly jumps towards me and I realize she's trying to stab me with her hand; since I'm not ready to feel this pain yet, I take her hand and, as if it's a very elegant dance, I shift her center of gravity then quickly sit down on the floor and drop her onto my lap. I also realized she wasn't putting that much force into her attack.

"Huh...?" Violet didn't understand what happened.

Well, I seem to still remember the dance lessons I took in the past; this was a long time ago when I attended a multibillion company CEO's party, as my mom was the CEO's attorney at the time, I had to participate and dance with the CEO's daughter. And, because of that, I had to train in classical dance for two months, it was the most irritating time in my teenage life, stopping to think now, that was the same day I found Zack abandoned in the street.

I hugged Violet around the waist and spoke into her ear, "Calm down, I'm not going to disappear or anything, and you're not going to lose me, so you don't have to attack me out of jealousy."

Violet seemed to melt when she felt my embrace and heard my words, I noticed her eyes revert to their normal violet color.

"And to think that there was someone other than Violet's mother who could calm her down..." Natalia commented.

Hmm? I look at Natalia and I see her with a small smile on her face, I could also see Sasha and Kaguya's shocked expressions.

"Why are you looking at me like that?" I asked as I started stroking Violet's head.

"When Violet goes crazy, she only gets calmer when she destroys everything around her," Sasha spoke in a neutral tone. It was like she was used to it, I also noticed that she was looking at Violet with an annoyed look.

I noticed that Violet's smile seemed to grow in a distorted way, and she put her face to my chest and started sniffing at me.

"Darling~! Darling~! Darling~! Darling~!" She started talking like she was possessed by some evil spirit or something, although she looked quite adorable now.

"Hmm?" Suddenly her smile is gone, and she looks at me with a serious look.

"Why am I smelling another woman?"

"Oh I went to get Zack from the vet, I found my childhood friend who works at that place," I replied while smiling.

When I saw Violet's eyes change to blood red, I cup Violet's cheek in both hands and pull. "Don't think nonsense."

"S-Stop," She said in a funny voice.

I stopped pulling her cheek and kissed her.

"Uhunpf?" She made a funny sound of surprise, but soon she returned my kiss; as we practiced a few times, we were a little more experienced.

Suddenly, I feel a burst of murderous intent, I stop kissing Violet and look at Sasha with a smile on my face.

"Humpf," She turned her face away in annoyance.

This seemed to make Violet satisfied, she smiled lovingly and hugged me possessively.

"You know I'll never run away from you, right?" I commented as I stroked Violet's white hair down her back.

"Yes, but..." She bit her lip.

I made her look at me, I needed to say this, "I don't know about Ruby yet, but Sasha is my wife, I want her close to me." Violet's face distorted in annoyance.

I look at Sasha and see that she was a little embarrassed.

"What do you think about this?" I asked her opinion.

"M-Me?" She pointed to herself, she didn't seem used to showing affection. "I- I do not know-"

Suddenly Kaguya appears beside Sasha and slams her elbow into Sasha's stomach.

"Ouch! What are you doing!?" Sasha yelled angrily.

"Don't be indecisive now, this is about your future," Kaguya spoke in a neutral tone.

"..."

When Sasha heard Kaguya's words, she was speechless for a moment.

I notice Sasha's face has changed several times, embarrassed, curious, scared, and a little obsessive? It was quite interesting to see how her face constantly changed.

"Bitch, begone. He's just mine, my Darling~" Violet spoke possessively as she hugged me, but she didn't look as pissed off as before.

Suddenly Sasha's face changed, her eyes turned blood red, and as soon as she looked at Violet, she gets annoyed.

"Huuuh!?" Her face distorted in anger, "This bitch."

Sasha gets up from the bed then she uses her speed and appears beside me, she hugs me from behind in a possessive way and says, "He's my husband, bitch!"

I feel the sensation of two mature Sasha bunnies on my back, Violet looked at Sasha annoyed then she hugged me too.

As she was sitting on my lap I could feel Violet's two bunnies who weren't the same size as Sasha's bunnies, but they were a perfect size; they were neither too small nor too big, they were perfect.

Ahh~, I was in heaven now...

"Well, that was somehow resolved by Lord Victor," Kaguya spoke with a small smile.

"Are you sure? They look like they could kill each other at any time," Natalia commented as she looked at Sasha and Violet who were glaring at each other as the two women hugged me possessively.

"Well, they can't just hold hands and say they'll get along with each other, after all, you know Lady Violet's personality, right?"

"Indeed," Natalia said.

"This is just the beginning. Lady Violet is angry at Lady Sasha, but she doesn't want to kill Lady Sasha like before; Lady Violet is just acting like a possessive teenager now." Kaguya explained, then she continued:

"And Lady Sasha has stopped being stubborn about her feelings, and is acting more honestly; that's progress for a woman like her who isn't used to showing affection openly."

Natalia nods her head and puts her finger on her face, then she commented with a small smile on her face:

"I wonder what will happen when Lady Ruby shows up."

Kaguya looked at Natalia with a neutral look, "You're having fun with this whole situation, huh?"

Natalia looked at Kaguya, and she commented with a small smile on her face, "Who knows? I could be having fun, or I could just be pretending."

Kaguya lets out a small sigh when she sees the blonde maid's attitude.

## Chapter 24: Two wives.

As my two wives hugged me, I looked at Kaguya, "Kaguya, call that witch here, I need her services."

Kaguya looks in my direction and nods, then, without question, takes a small ball from her pocket and smashes it, soon a magic circle appears on the floor.

And, slowly, the witch June got off the ground; she was just wearing a big sweatshirt and short shorts, it looked like she was about to go to sleep.

"Huh?" June was surprised for a moment but then she soon asked Kaguya, annoyed, "Really, Maid? I was in Japan about to go to sleep in a hotel after a good shower in an Onsen!"

She knows how to enjoy life with the money she earns, huh?

Kaguya just looked at June like she was looking at a pile of garbage.

"June," I said.

June has stopped looking at Kaguya and looks at me, then her face takes on a shocked expression when she sees me.

"Oya, Oya? Has the number of women grown? Isn't that Lady Sasha?" June commented smiling.

Sasha and Violet stop staring like they want to kill each other and look at June.

Sasha looks at June confused like she was wondering why June was here, she seemed to know June.

Violet looks at June neutrally as if she doesn't care about her.

"How much do I owe, June?" I asked, I remember I placed an order before and she said she was going to charge me in the future; it's better to know how much money I owe her now so I can plan my steps in the future.

"Oh?" June flashes a greedy smile, then she says, "You owe me a million-" Just as she was about to complete her sentence, she closed her mouth and looked at Violet with a cold sweat falling off her face.

Violet looks at June with a small smile on her face, I realize her red eyes are staring at June coldly, "Excuse me? I didn't hear what you said, can you repeat that?"

June's face darkened a little when she saw Violet's expression.

"Cough!" She pretended to cough to change the subject, then continued, "I mean, you owe me \$30,000." she said with a gentle smile.

"Good," Violet said and then hugged me again while ignoring June.

I also feel Sasha hugging me from behind while looking at June neutrally; she seemed to be breathing down my neck too, although she was doing it quite sneakily.

I was a little surprised that Violet didn't mind Sasha's presence right now, but that's a good thing. I know it's hard for the two of them to get along, but the important thing is they don't try to kill each other while I'm not around.

But 30,000 dollars, huh? That's a big amount, but I think I can get it in one day if I steal from the right thieves.

"I need you to make me an outfit and a black mask," I tell my

order to June.

"Huh?" June looked at me strangely.

"What happened, are you going to tell me you can't do it?" I asked.

"I mean, I can do that, but your requests are always weird, huh? The first one was a fake ID, and now it's clothes? What are you planning?" She asked with a curious smile.

"Knowing about this information is going to cost money, do you really want to know?" I spoke while smiling a little; I could see June's smile twitch a little when she heard my words.

"You're greedy, huh?" June commented.

"Not much as you," I said.

June looked at me shocked and then started to laugh amusedly, "Hahahaha. You're right, You're right, You're right! I am a greedy witch!"

Suddenly, several magic circles started to appear on the sweatshirt she was wearing. The circles start spinning quickly, and soon several green lights start to come out of June, and, slowly, her outfit starts changing into a professional women's suit.

"My name is June, Codename the greedy witch. I am the witch who solves all the problems related to the modern world with a certain amount of money, of course." She spoke in a professional tone while showing a small smile in the last sentence.

"Oh", I said while clapping my hands a little for the light show. I also noticed that a card appeared in front of me and when I took the card, I saw that it had a golden color and had the name June carved into the card. I think this card was made of pure gold?

"Thank you, thank you," She spoke gratefully while smiling

satisfied; she seemed to be quite narcissistic too.

"I never thought this piece of garbage-, Cough... I never thought June would give you her Codename."

"Hey! I heard that!" June looked at Kaguya irritably.

Kaguya just ignored her as she looked at me.

"Codename?" I asked curiously.

"Codenames are a title given by the queen of witches. For the society of witches a Codename is a form of status, but not only that, if a witch gives her Codename to someone she judges as a customer, a golden card will appear." Sasha explained as she hugged me tighter. "Using this card, you can contact the witch to request her services anytime you want."

It seems like witches work 24 hours a day, they don't seem to get rest.

"Oh thank you, Sasha," I said gratefully.

I felt Sasha's body tremble a little, "Mm," she made a cute sound and hid her face behind my back.

"Tsk," Violet clicked her tongue in annoyance; she looked agitated.

I patted Violet's head, and soon her expression changed to a satisfied one as I look at the golden card in my hand and think, 'witch society seems to be more interesting than I thought; a society built on a form of energy called 'magic', huh?'

"But why did you give this to me? I don't have as much money as my wives do, and you know it." I told June.

June looks at me and smiles, "Yes, I know. You're poor now, but I smell money coming from you, and, in the future, you'll have a lot of

money; I'm betting on that."

She flashes a confident smile, "And I never lose when I make a bet."

She smiles like a teenager who has found something interesting and continues, "Not to mention that you seem to be very close to the two richest heiresses of the noble vampires."

Oh? She doesn't know that Sasha's Clan has lost its noble status. I feel Sasha's face moving a little behind my back; it seems she's noticed that too.

Well, June could be lying, so there's no guarantee she doesn't know anything.

"Getting back to business! What do you need!?" June asked as her eyes sparkled with the US dollar symbol.

"Do you know that anime called Tokyo Vampire?" I asked. I didn't watch the anime, but I saw the protagonist's image several times on the internet.

The protagonist had white hair, different colored eyes, and was wearing a black outfit; he was transformed by a beautiful vampire with purple hair.

"Yes, I watched it when I was in Japan."

"I need an outfit similar to the protagonist's, but I want some changes to the outfit... The outfit should look like a straitjacket used to arrest criminals, the boot should be a little bigger, and the mask should just cover my mouth."

"Okay... Do you intend to cosplay?" She asked curiously.

I just looked at her as I smiled and stroked Violet's hair, my wife seemed to be much calmer now actually... I think she's almost asleep.

"If you're so curious, I can tell you if you cancel my debt," I spoke.

"Humpf, forget what I said." She gave up, it seems her greed is higher than her curiosity.

June claps her hands and several magic circles appear a little away from her then, soon, an outfit appears; the outfit that appeared is the anime protagonist's outfit, but slowly the outfit began to undergo changes that I asked for.

"Do you want something like this?" She asked.

I look at the outfit and nod satisfied. "As expected of a professional witch."

"Praising me won't make me lower the price!" She spoke with a big smile on her face.

"How much did the clothes cost?" I asked.

June puts her hand to her chin and looks at the outfit as if she's thinking about something.

I feel Violet move in my arms, she looks at the outfit I ordered and her eyes start to sparkle for a moment; she seems interested in the outfit. I also felt Sasha who was hiding her face behind me peeking a bit at the outfit I asked for, she looks at the outfit for a moment and says:

"Cringe."

Oof, I felt a stake piercing my heart... For a moment my smile almost broke, but soon I recovered and said, "I know, that's why I ordered this outfit; no one would ever think a vampire would use this outfit to do what I'm going to do in the future."

"I may do it for you for free if you tell me what you intend to do."

"Denied. You can't have everything in life, Witch." I spoke with a

smile on my face, then I continued, "Choose, do you want money, or do you want to satisfy your curiosity!?"

"Ugh..." She makes a difficult face, then she speaks screaming, "I want both!"

"Umu, as expected from a witch with the title of greedy, but unfortunately, that's impossible," I said laughing.

June pouts, she looks very pretty now.

I feel Violet and Sasha looking at me with a dangerous look, my smile growing, "How do you know what I was thinking?"

"Our connection told us." The two spoke in a neutral tone.

"Oh? Interesting." So they can feel my emotions and my surface thoughts too, huh?

I start to think about what I'm going to do when Violet, Sasha, and I finally get alone.

Suddenly, I hear two small explosions near me. I look down and see that Violet's face was very red and I could see that there was smoke coming out of her head like it had overheated.

I turn slightly and look at Sasha's red face, I could also see little yellow lightning flashing above her head.

My smile grew even wider, and I couldn't help but honestly say, "You guys are so cute!"

Sasha suddenly wakes up from her stupor and screams, "D-D-Do not look at me!" She quickly hides her face behind my back, I could even hear her heart beating rapidly.

Violet just hid her face in my chest while she had a huge smile on her face and, just like Sasha, I could hear Violet's heartbeat.

And once again, I understood that they weren't like the vampires in the movies. After all, they weren't 'dead', although normally my wives' hearts beat very slowly.

I looked at June and saw her face distorted, she looked like she had eaten something bad; I laughed when I saw her expression, "How much did the clothes cost me?"

"The clothes didn't cost anything."

"Huh?"

"I just had to use my powers to create the outfit, I didn't use any complex incantations or anything like that, I just created fabric. That's something very easy to do."

"Oh? You are very honest." I said surprised

For some reason her face turned red, "Humpf, I just did it for free because I have a long friendship with Lady Violet and because I can create fabric easily, make no mistake! You still owe me!"

Why is she acting like this all of a sudden?

"I see, thanks," I said with a small smile.

"Humpf," She turned her face away and started muttering something about how it wasn't fair and she should look for a boyfriend or something.

"Can you create another outfit for Violet? Of course in a female version."

"Huh?" Violet was surprised.

June looks at me and nods, then she claps her hands again, and what happened before is repeated. Soon an outfit similar to mine except in a female version was next to my outfit.

I looked at Violet, "You looked interested, so I got you one."

"Darling~!" She suddenly climbs on top of me with a crazed smile on her face and bites me!?

I feel my blood draining down my neck.

"Bitch!" Sasha got annoyed for some reason, and soon she bites my collarbone and starts sucking my blood.

Feeling my wives' emotions and desires, slowly, my teeth start to change, and my eyes change to blood red, then I bite Violet's collarbone!

"Ahh~" Violet stopped sucking my blood and moaned a little as she hugged me tighter.

Kaguya, Maria, June, and Natalia, who were seeing this, all react differently.

"For some reason, I feel like I should get a boyfriend," June commented.

"No man will want a gold digger like you," Kaguya spoke in an emotionless tone.

"Huuuh?" June's face distorted in anger, "Are you frustrated that your master is being stolen from you, Maid?"

Kaguya's eyes flutter a little, and she is silent; she didn't want to waste time talking to June.

June, thinking she's guessed right, started to smile, "I feel sorry for you, Maid; Lady Violet will be stolen from you."

Seeing that Kaguya didn't react to her words, June was confused, then she thought, 'Did I get my guess wrong?'

"Lady June, I have a job for you." Natalia suddenly said.

"Oh?" June loses interest in Kaguya and looks at Natalia with greedy eyes.

"I want you to investigate what is happening in this city," Natalia said.

Kaguya, who listened to what Natalia said, began to pay attention to the conversation.

"According to Lady Sasha, and Kaguya. A vampire named Lucy stole something from the church, I want to know what that 'something' is."

June makes a very serious expression, "This is going to cost a lot of money, you know?"

"I know," Natalia said smiling, then she continued, "Money is not a problem, just investigate it for me"

"I accept your request but remember you must pay 50% of the money upfront, and if another witch is helping the church, I can't interfere too much. After all, you know the rules of witches, right?"

Natalia smiles gently: "Rule number 1 of witches, a witch must not conflict with another witch. If the witch's employer is an enemy of an individual who is hiring another witch, both witches must abandon their duty immediately." She explained as she was remembering, and then she continued:

"Of course I know."

"good."

June throws two small spheres at Kaguya, and soon she disappears into a magic circle.

Kaguya raises her hands and takes the two spheres June threw and puts them in her pocket, "An Ordinary Maid doesn't get enough money to pay a witch for this kind of service," she commented.

Natalia just displays a gentle smile and doesn't say anything, soon she walks towards a wall and goes through a secret passage.

"Tsk, I don't like this," Kaguya said, annoyed, when she saw Natalia leaving without giving an explanation, then she looked at Victor, who was biting his wife's neck, and several thoughts were going through Kaguya's head now.

## Chapter 25: Professor Adam.

After solving the problems with my wives and getting an outfit to disguise myself as James Smith, I go to college. When I get to college, I notice the students looking at me differently; they seemed to recognize me from the game that I played with Luan yesterday.

I also noticed some female students staring at me as if they were looking at prey, some male students were staring at me with explicit disdain on their faces.

Seeing all this, I just ignored it all and walked towards my classroom.

"Isn't he that player who jumped off across court yesterday? Did you see the video?" A man spoke.

"Yes, and to think that there was a player with those skills in this school... How did he never get recognized?" Another asked.

...I think I overreacted... Meh, I didn't mean to hide my changes from the start, what's the point of gaining powers if you can't use them?

I just have to avoid doing something humanly impossible, like jump to the height of a building or something. If things get out of hand I just have to get out of college, after all, I decided to stay in college just to satisfy my desire to play sports.

Arriving in the classroom, I realize I arrived too early; I look around and soon I see my economics teacher. He is a tall man, I think he is 200 cm tall, he has an amazing white mustache, white hair, and sapphire blue eyes; he was wearing a well-fitting suit and, despite being over 60 years old, he looked like a man who was in his 30s. In the past when his family and I went for a walk, I could see that under those clothes he wears there is a man with a well-trained body...

How did he manage to keep his body toned after being over 60 years of age?

"Oh, Victor... It's been a while since I've seen you in my class." He spoke with a small smile on his face as he turned and looked at me.

Looking into Adam's sapphire blue eyes, I felt an instinctive danger in my body but, the moment I felt that danger, the feeling I got disappeared as if everything I felt was an illusion.

But I knew this wasn't an illusion... I decided to keep this incident locked in my head.

"Professor Adam... You talk as if we haven't known each other for years, it's only been three days since I came to your class."

He laughed a little with an amused smile and said, "Indeed."

I walk up to the teacher and the closer I got to him, I couldn't help but look at his height with a bit of shock; he was the tallest man I've seen in person and a two-meter tall man can be very intimidating.

He leans against his desk and folds his arms as he looks at me, "Tell me the news, I hear you had a show yesterday on the basketball court."

"Do you know that too?" I asked in mock surprise.

"Everyone at this college knows what happened and you made a lot of enemies yesterday, after all, there are a lot of people who worship the captain of the basketball team." He commented casually.

"Oh?" I display a small smile on my face.

He looked at my smile and soon he exhibited a smile of his own as if he understood something, "But you don't mind, right?"

"How do you know?" I asked with mock shock as if he had discovered a big secret but, of course, I was still smiling.

"Heh Kid, how long do you think I've known you? I've watched you grow up with my kids, I know your personality very well." He chuckled.

He and I laugh together in fun, this teacher is an old acquaintance of mine; he is the father of two of my childhood friends, Leona and Edward, this man's name is Adam William Lykos.

"But don't cause too much trouble, the dean of this college is supporting Luan, and he might try to do something with you."

"Is he going to try to kick me out of college or something?" I spoke in disdain, if it was before I would be worried, but now? Now, I don't care anymore.

"Probably yes, but seeing as how you don't care, I think it's okay with you? Just don't cause too much trouble since that might make your parents sad." He warned me.

"I appreciate the concern, but don't worry about my family; I'm sure my parents won't be upset about something like that." After all, knowing my mother, if she finds out about every incident from beginning to end, she is going to try to sue the school. What about my dad? He'll just nod at me satisfied, after all, he was the kind of man who works things out with his fist in the past.

"Well, if you're saying so," Adam said as if it didn't really matter to him.

"You look paler than before, are you eating well?" he asked curiously.

"Yes, with the food my mom gave me, I even gained muscle, look," I said while pointing to my arm.

"Hahaha," He laughed like he thought of something very funny. He and I both know I was lying but, as expected from my childhood friend's father, he's a man who doesn't care much about things that

don't involve his kids directly.

From what I understand of Adam's personality, he's the kind of man who can see the world burn and he won't care. He would only care about something if his kids were in the crossfire, he's very protective of his family, and that's why he and I get along, after all, we are alike.

"You tell good jokes, Victor." He spoke with a small smile.

"I didn't try to joke, as always your sense of humor is weird," I commented.

"Try to live as long as I do, I'm sure you'll have a few screws loose in your head."

He looks into my eyes and speaks in a deep voice like he's inducing me to do something, I even notice that his blue eyes sparkled for a few seconds, "What do you think, Victor? Why don't you loosen up a little?"

"Huh? What are you talking about, teacher?" I asked confused.

He closes his eyes and sighs a little relieved, then he smiled, "I was asking how long will you hide behind this 'mask' that you created yourself."

"...Adam, you know that all beings with intelligence in this world who live in society hide their true 'self', right?" I spoke with a cold little smile.

"Indeed, after all, we weird beings have to adapt to society." He spoke in a neutral tone, then looked at his watch.

"Victor, class is starting are you going to participate, or are you going somewhere?" He asked.

"I'm going to the swim club," I said, I need to experiment to see if I have weakness in the water.

"Oh, I see, as I've known you for a long time, I'm going to put that you were present in today's class," He said.

"Thank you, Professor Adam." He didn't need to do this but, as it's a kind gesture, I just have to thank him.

Soon I leave the classroom and walk towards the swim club.

When Victor left the classroom, Adam walked towards the window and, with a simple gesture of strength, he jumps towards a tree. Then, soon after, he jumps towards a building away from the college; all his actions were very soft, it was like he hadn't made any noise at all.

On top of a tall building away from the college, Adam sighed to himself in relief, then he picks up a phone and searches the list for the contact named 'My princess'.

Adam coughed a little to disguise that he was relieved about something and clicked to call his daughter, the phone rings a little, and soon his daughter answers.

"Father," Leona spoke into the phone.

"Oh, my little princess," He spoke with a satisfied smile on his face.

"Have you discovered something?" Leona asked impatiently.

Adam's smile breaks a little, but he replies, "Yes. Unfortunately, he's not from your family; he didn't react to my pressure like a newborn wolf would, and I also didn't feel the connection indicating he was from my pack."

"Oh..."

Hearing his daughter's disappointed reaction, Adam quickly speaks, "But don't worry! The wolf's transformation may be dormant, after all, just like you, he could just wake up on a night with a full

moon!" He tried to cheer her up.

"You're wrong, Dad." Leona sighed.

"Hmm?" Adam pretended not to understand.

"He won't become a member of my pack... The wolf's venom has been neutralized by the vampire's venom, Victor is a vampire now..."

Of course, Adam knew this, but he still reacted in surprise, "Oh? Is he a vampire? Why do you think that?"

"Well, the changes are obvious, and he's married to the Snow Clan's heiress, and Clan Fulger's"

"Oh...? I didn't know that." Adam was really surprised this time and he started to think; Wolf's venom wouldn't be an easy thing to neutralize, especially my daughter's venom... But if two noble vampires bit him, it makes sense that wolf venom would be neutralized.'

"What do we do, father?" Leona asked a little apprehensively.

"Huh?" Adam wakes up from his thoughts, and responds, "We don't do anything."

"...Why?"

"As Victor isn't a wolf, he's not our problem anymore, he's just a leech now," Adam spoke in a definite tone.

"But-" Leona tried to say something, but Adam cut it off and spoke seriously as his eyes glowed a little bright blue.

"I forbid you to get involved with him."

"Father!" Leona yelled angrily.

"Leona, who do you think you're talking to? Lower your voice,"

Adam growled, he likes to spoil his daughter, but he wouldn't forgive the insubordination.

"I-I u-understand, I will-" Leona stops talking, and Adam can hear that she was sobbing and crying a little.

His eyes slowly began to lose their intensity, and he sighed, "You fool, I don't forbid you from treating him like normal friends... What I forbid is that you get involved in leech affairs, that's not our problem."

"R-Rigth~" Leona spoke in a tone like she was crying.

"I'll hang up, class is starting," Adam said sighing again.

...

When Adam hangs up, Leona wipes her tears away with the toilet paper, and sighs.

She was currently in the service area where she usually works taking care of animals.

"You're good at acting," Edward spoke in a neutral tone, he heard and saw everything Leona did, he even saw her start to sob and cry out of nowhere.

"Shut up," Leona said, then she snorted proudly, "I learned acting watching K-Drama"

"Only our dad would fall for this horrible act," Edward said as he rolled his eyes.

Leona pouted, and looked at her brother, "What do we do?"

"Nothing." Edward spoke, then he continued: "Victor turned into a vampire, so what? I've known him since he was little, I know he won't act like an emo and say we're enemies or some shit like that, just treat him normally."

"Hmm, you're right..." Leona spoke a little unsurely.

"...Did you want him as a member of the family?" Edward asked.

"Huh?" Leona's face turned a little red when she heard her brother's question.

"I understand, I understand." He nods his head several times as if he understands something: "You've known each other since you were a child, and you had a similar situation, after all, you and he were sick. He was always kind to you and, because of that, you're in love with him. You expected him to become a wolf so you could get close to him, and develop this relationship, right? This is the basic plot of any romance anime."

Slowly, Leona's face began to turn completely red with embarrassment.

Soon Edward continues, "If you followed the plot of an anime, you would approach Victor, and you would start dating him, after all, the childhood friend always wins in this type of plot."

Edward makes a serious face and an exaggerated gesture, "But you didn't expect a YANDERE to show up and steal the man you were in love with!" He points to Leona who had a completely red face.

"And if one Yandere wasn't enough, he got two Yandere! And, when we talk about Yandere, there's only one thing we can expect... Trouble! And since he has two yanderes, he has double problems!"

Leona started to clench her fist angrily and looked at her brother like he was a dead man.

Seeing his sister's face, Edward stopped joking and looked at her with a puzzled face, "Don't tell me that's it...?"

Soon Edward's face turns red with anger, "I forbid-" he tried to say something, but before he could finish the sentence, Leona made a

move.

"You Fucking Idiot!!" She made a fist and attacked Edward's stomach.

"Ugh-" Edward didn't expect this sudden attack, so he flies towards the wall as a fist imprint appeared on his stomach.

"Humpf" Leona huffed, "You're wrong, I'm not in love with him, I treat him like a precious friend stop making up lies! I just didn't want him to fall into those leeches' traps!" Soon she turned and left the room where she was.

"Cough, Cough," Edward coughed a little as he came out of the wall that had the silhouette of his body and says, "She's getting stronger at a very fast pace... And it's only been three days since she woke up as a wolf, soon, she won't be a fragile girl anymore... She'll turn into a gorilla."

## Chapter 26: Why do you hide behind that mask?

Nighttime.

Initially, I just wanted to check if I had a weakness to water, like some types of vampires I've seen in movie theaters, but... When I found out I didn't have a running water weakness I started swimming and felt great. I ended up getting carried away and I swam until night fell.

Thankfully there wasn't a swim club class today, so I was able to enjoy the pool by myself.

I was currently in the men's locker room using a towel to dry off.

As I used the towel to dry myself, I spoke out loud, "The only weaknesses I have are the blessed items, and that I need to be invited into a stranger's house."

I look at my reflection in the mirror and can't help but notice something, "Did I get taller?"

As I stared at my reflection in the mirror, I could momentarily see the figure of my former self, a thin 21-year-old young adult with pale skin and sapphire blue eyes.

I compare my current body with my old body from my memories and I can't help but say something, "It really feels like I went through an experiment to create super soldiers..."

The previous thin, sickly-looking man suddenly turns into a tall, muscular man...

"The vampire's bite forces the host's body to evolve into its peak state..." I muttered aloud.

I was 175 CM before I turned, and now I'm over 180 CM; I wonder how much I will have grown when I stop evolving. My wife Violet said it all depends on my potential...

I stop thinking about bullshit and quickly finish drying myself with the towel that was in my closet; when I'm done drying off, I look in my bag and see the outfit I asked June to prepare for me.

I nod my head satisfied, and I look for the clothes I was wearing; when I'm done dressing, I walk out of the men's locker room and carry my bag behind my back.

The moment I step out of the locker room, I start walking down the silent corridors of the college, "Now that I've stopped to think, shouldn't the building security be patrolling?"

I hear someone's footsteps approaching in the distance.

I look back and see a man approaching with my vampire vision.

I turn off my vampire vision, and soon my world goes back to normal, and I look at a man who has a smile on his face. He had blond hair, blue eyes, and he behaved politely; he looked like those average princes.

The man suddenly disappeared and reappears in front of me, he takes my face in his hand and throws me into the wall.

Boooom!

I felt dizzy and felt bits of concrete stuck behind my hair. While confused, and alert at the same time, the man laughed contemptuously and said something:

"Yes, indeed, a little strong, but not enough to be by her side; at least with your little strength. Do you think you deserve to be by her side? Especially with you being a mere Plebeian. This will never work, just stay away from her, otherwise, I or someone else will kill you and

your family for her. That's a friendly warning, feel honored that you can hear so much from someone noble like me. Next time, I won't be so kind." He laughed out loud and looked at me haughtily; his expression was like a Rottweiler looking at a kitten.

I coughed up blood on the floor, I also felt my head regenerate; I looked at the man with a neutral expression while my eyes changed to red.

Did he just threaten my family...? Is he a fool...?

My head wasn't working well, but I was sure what I heard.

"What do you say? How about you just disappear, if you do, I'll let you live." He spoke with the same smile as if he were the most important being in the world. "When you disappear, I'll be free to conquer her."

I crack my neck, and snap my hands, "That hurt," For the first time I spoke.

My head was clearer now.

He disappears from my vision and reappears beside me again, I couldn't react to him as he held me by the face and punched me in the stomach.

"Hahahahaha, so weak, so weak! Why did she choose you!? You are so weak, it should have been me!"

I coughed up blood on the floor and he started hitting me again, as he hit me, I looked at him, seeing his arrogant face and expression that was saying 'I am the king of the world', I can't help but think;

'Disappointing... All I feel about this man is just disappointment... Is that what a noble vampire is?'

'A creature that has an ego the size of the planet and thinks they're the center of the world?'

I'll be honest, I was excited to fight a noble vampire, I was eager to fight and crush them beneath my feet; I thought I was going to have a good challenge... But this is just disappointing...

Why? Why am I like that? Why am I so disappointed?

I don't know where this pride of mine comes from... I'm just a newborn, it's only been three days since I turned into a vampire, but why? Why am I just so disappointed? Why am I not angry with him? After all, he insulted my family, the most important treasure of my life. Something is wrong with me, if it was with Luan, I would have attacked him already, but why is it that, with this man, all I feel is disappointment?

Why?

Crack! Crack!

I bite my tongue and refuse to scream in pain as he broke my arms and threw me off the third floor; I feel the glass shatter behind my back, and as I fall from the third floor of the building, I gaze at the full moon with a bored look on my face.

I felt pain all over my body, but for some reason, I felt numb; it was a strange experience, it was like this body wasn't mine.

I look at the blond-haired man, and when I see his face, the clouds of doubt in my mind have cleared a little.

"When an insect insults you, do you feel something?" I asked myself the question.

The blond-haired man comes down from the third floor and walks towards me.

Soon my smile grows, "No, you don't feel anything." In my mind, even though he is stronger than me, he didn't deserve my attention; I don't know where my pride comes from, but I've felt that way since

when I turned into a vampire...

Same with Luan, I thought he was a worthy opponent, but the moment he lowered his head and backed away like a dog, I lost interest... I hate him, but that's just my sadistic side and ego speaking. I wanted to see him humiliate himself one more time and, in doing so, I would feel satisfied, but I had also lost interest in him when he proved to be just an unwilling servant.

I had understood something new about myself, but I still had questions on my mind...

I don't understand... Why am I like this? I don't have the experience of a veteran warrior, I'm not a martial arts genius, but why am I like this? Why? Why?

I questioned myself several times in my mind while looking at the full moon, I felt strange, it was like this body wasn't mine, it was like these emotions weren't mine, I felt trapped...

I felt like a wild animal that was trapped and tamed...

I don't understand... Maybe I'm just freaking out... Yes, since I was turned into a vampire, my emotions are very chaotic: I get angry a lot easier, I get attached a lot easier, I hate easier, I feel sadistic pleasure in defeating my enemies, and I feel happy when I step on them with my feet like insects...

Yes, maybe something is wrong with my head.

As I looked at the Full Moon, I heard the vampire's footsteps approaching me, he looks at me, "Today, you're going to die, and I'm going after what belongs to me."

I ignored this man's words... What was his name again? He looked strong, but what was his name?

Well, I guess he's not important after all...

Suddenly, I remember the words of my teacher Adam.

"What do you think, Victor? Why don't you loosen up a little? How long are you going to hide behind this 'mask' that you created yourself?"

When I remembered those words, I felt like all the doubts I'd had the moment I faced this man were cleared up.

"Haha..." I felt like laughing, laughing out loud, "HAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA!" I laughed madly as I placed my left hand, which at some point regenerated, on my forehead and lifted my hair up; it was the first time I had laughed with all my being, and I finally understood why I was feeling weird. All this time, I was holding back... All this time, I wore this mask because it's the right thing to do, after all, everything that's weird is excluded from society. I wore a mask to hide the real me...

When did I start using this mask? I asked myself confused.

"What are you laughing at!? Shut up and die!"

Oh, I remember now... It was that incident when I was a kid and I got lost in the woods...

"Hey, Vic... Can I call you @#\$%?" I heard a child's voice in my ears; the voice sounded like static, and I couldn't remember who it was.

I suddenly feel a warm feeling coming from my stomach, it was such intense heat, and it was furiously asking me to let go; I flash a smile full of sharp teeth and let that heat run wild.

Boooooooooom!

A pillar of flame suddenly came out of Victor's body.

...

"Ahhhh~!" Violet who was lying in one of the underground rooms she had asked to build moaned aloud.

Sasha, Natalia, and Maria who were in the same room watching television just looked at Violet confused.

Violet twitched her legs and lay down on the bed, her eyes were blood red, her breathing was ragged, and she was mumbling. "Darling~! Darling~! Darling~!" She looked like a broken record that kept saying the same word as she twitched her legs.

"Lady Violet? What's going on—...Oh my god," Natalia said as she approached Violet, but the moment she saw the erotic face Violet was making, she was surprised.

Sasha approaches Violet, looks at her friend, and when she sees the liquids that were leaking from Violet, she can't help asking, with her cheeks a little red with embarrassment, "W-What is happening?" She stuttered a little.

"Darling~ Darling~ I can feel it inside me!" She responded as she squirmed.

"...Huh?" Sasha didn't understand.

"Natalia, do you know something?" Sasha asked.

Natalia just shook her head no and continued looking at Violet with the same neutral expression, but Maria who was close to Natalia could see that the maid had a small smile on her face.

"Where is Kaguya?" Sasha asked as she looked around.

"She is in the shadow of Lord Victor," Natalia replied, and continued, "She is protecting him."

When Sasha was about to say something, she is suddenly surprised when Violet gets up from the bed, "I need to see my Darling!" She spoke with a slightly red face.

"First, you should change your clothes," Sasha spoke in a tone that didn't allow refusal.

Violet looks down and sees the mess that was her dress, she nods her head and then disappears towards the bathroom.

"I'll go ahead, something must have happened to my husband." Sasha spoke with her cheeks showing a little embarrassment, she wasn't used to saying the word 'husband'.

Soon, she too disappears, the only thing normal people could notice was a silhouette of a woman; Sasha's maid Maria also disappears and follows Sasha.

## Chapter 27: Priorities

What is this? What is it? I asked myself as I looked at the pillar of flames coming out of that newborn's body.

This should have been an easy job, I eliminate the arrogant newborn and take the woman I so want, but what is this!?

Wasn't he just another newborn who was lucky enough to gain Violet's attention? I understand Violet, she must have gotten bored and found a human to treat as her toy; this happened many times in the past and female vampires have always done that. Wasn't he just that!? Wasn't he just a toy!?

But... Why does he have this power!? WHY DOES HE HAVE THESE FLAMES!?

How can a newborn have the power of the Snow Clan!? Who is this man!?

Suddenly Corneliu heard the roar of a beast.

ROOOOOOOOOOOOOOAR!

"Hiii~!" Corneliu fell to the ground as he stared at Victor in fear.

Victor's appearance had changed, his clothes had disappeared because of the heat and he was practically naked, but that was not noticeable because of the flames that were covering his body.

Victor's entire body was covered with fire, his ears became sharper-looking like an Elf, the sclera of his eyes that was once white changed to a dark black, his iris turned blood red, and the pupil of his eyes looked like the pupil of a dragon.

His smile grew abnormally, and Corneliu could see all of Victor's

sharp teeth; he could see that Victor's teeth had also undergone a change. Victor's old teeth that looked like small sharp teeth, grew and seem to have changed into the teeth of a demonic beast.

"H-How... How do you have that power!? Only vampire counts have this power!? Who are you!?"

...

It's hot, it's hot, but I feel good... I feel released, but I feel angry! A growing fury was building inside my body, and I couldn't control that fury.

All my senses were improved, I could see, feel, and hear everything around me; it was an uncomfortable feeling.

I look at the blond-haired vampire. When he looks at me, I see he started pissing himself in fear and, when I saw that, my sadistic smile grew on my face. I wanted to humiliate him. I wanted to see him in more despair. I wanted to hear his screams!

I took a step forward, and I noticed that when I did, the ground I stepped on started to catch on fire, and I also noticed that the moment I took a step forward, the vampire's entire body shook with fear.

With a little thrust from my legs, I appear in front of the blond vampire and grab him by the neck.

"AHHHHHH!" He started screaming in pain, and hearing those screams filled me with sadistic satisfaction!

I realized that my hand hurt him a lot, I squeezed his neck more, and I saw his neck burning with fire.

"Let me go! L-let me go!"

I did what he wanted, I released him 'gently', of course, he probably didn't like my gentle side very much. I held his throat in my hand and pulled!

"AHHHHHHHHH!!!!!!!!!" Those were his last screams and, soon, he couldn't speak anymore.

When I saw that noble vampire kneeling with his throat destroyed, when I saw him look in fear; I felt my whole body tremble in pleasure. I wanted more. I wanted to see him in despair. I wanted to see him humiliated!

I took a step towards the noble vampire to continue playing with my new toy.

I suddenly smell an intense smell of blood and turn my face towards the scent; I knew that smell, I don't remember where, but I did.

Soon I felt an intense pain in my chest. "Ugh" It was like someone was slowly squeezing my heart; my heart hurt so much, I knew something was wrong.

I utilize my vampiric vision, and soon my vision turns to a world of blood; I ignore all the humans in my field of vision, and I focus all my senses on the scent of blood.

Soon, I see the vision of several humans covered in golden energy surrounding two female vampires. One female vampire was lying on the ground, and she looked hurt, and the other female vampire was kneeling while holding her arms...

Then I focused my attention on the bite mark of the vampire who was kneeling.

I felt my heartbeat like it was calling her, then I understood something: "Ruby."

I focused all my strength on my legs, and I jumped towards the two vampires.

Seeing Victor leaving, Corneliu did not understand what had

happened.

...

In an area that should have been full of walking civilians.

A group of hunters was surrounding two female vampires, the first woman was wearing a maid dress; she had white hair and pink eyes, and was holding the wound in her stomach. "Lady Ruby, please run away," She said while coughing blood on the floor.

The other woman had red hair and green eyes, she was holding her arm which was injured by a deep cut. Hearing what the maid said, she looked at Luna with a neutral gaze, though anyone who knew Ruby well enough could tell she was worried about Luna, "Silence, Maid." She ordered.

Luna flashed a gentle little smile and was silent, but inside, she was trying to plan something so Ruby could run away, but, as usual, she couldn't think of anything.

She coughs up blood on the floor and looks at the woman who attacked her: she was wearing a professional white jacket and looked like a Japanese woman, white skin, black onyx eyes; she also looked tall for a Japanese woman, standing at 175cm tall. Then she heard the Japanese woman say:

"Ruby Scarlett, heiress of Clan Scarlett, you are very brave to walk around without a guard."

"I don't need bodyguards," Ruby spoke dryly, and then she continued: "All beings in our world know the consequences of provoking my mother's wrath." She touches her wound with her fingers, then brings them to her front; when she sees the blood on her finger, she thinks:

'How many years has it been since I was injured? I remember the last time it happened was when I was 3 years old, I remember that a

country disappeared from the face of Earth that day.'

When the older hunters heard Ruby's words, they shivered a little in fear, but when they looked at the Japanese woman, they were more relieved because they saw that the woman wasn't afraid.

"Indeed," The woman spoke in agreement with Ruby's words.

"All beings in our world know the legends of Lady Scathach Scarlett..." She noticed that her subordinates trembled in fear when they heard the woman's name and shook her head, inwardly disappointed, then continued:

"The strongest female vampire in the world. A vampire over two thousand years old, she has been walking the Earth since Jesus was born into this world. Crazy, psychopath, and is considered by the church to be a monster we should never provoke. Because, the moment she is provoked, an incident like what happened 18 years ago can happen; an incident that reminded the world how vampires can be terrifying creatures."

The moment that incident is mentioned, all the hunters look at Ruby as if they've made the worst decision of their lives, the only one who doesn't feel that way is Carlos, the hunter who attacked and killed Sasha's maid.

He looked at Ruby with anger visible in his eyes, "Because of you, an entire country has disappeared from the face of Earth."

Ruby looked at the man with neutral eyes, "So what?"

"Huh?" The man could not believe what he heard.

"Don't throw your hypocrisies at me. How many people has the church killed in the name of its 'god'? How many wars has the church caused because of its 'god'? Shall I recall the incident of the saint of Orleans Jeanne d'Arc?"

"They were sinners!"

"Oh? So it's okay to murder thousands of people just because you said they were 'sinners'? As expected, the hypocrisy of the church has no limits." Ruby snorted in disdain.

"Don't act like you care! You're just a monster that sucks blood and kills for fun!" Carlos yelled angrily.

Carlos' companions just looked at him shocked, they were puzzled by Carlos' attitude, normally he wasn't a man who got irritated easily.

The Japanese woman looked at Carlos; his mate's kidnapping affected him so much, huh?

Ruby chuckled softly in amusement.

"What are you laughing at?"

Ruby didn't respond, she just looked at Carlos, and everyone could see that her eyes had changed to blood red: "I've never killed a human soul in my life. I've always drunk blood donated by humans to hospitals, I used my mother's money to buy them for me."

"..."

Carlos opened his mouth in shock, he looked at the Japanese woman, when he saw the Japanese woman gently waving, he was totally disbelieving what he was doing. 'Did I attack someone innocent? Wrong! She is not innocent, she is a vampire! A vampire is not innocent!'

Ruby's smile grew unnaturally as her sharp teeth began to show:

"The hard truth to swallow is; you hunters just hunt me because I'm a vampire, I'm a different species. For us vampires, all humans are just cattle, and for humans, vampires are their natural predators, that's just it."

"That's the law of nature, we need blood, and because of that, some of my species actively hunt humans. And, to defend against this natural predator, you were created. This whole situation was created by decisions made in the past, and this is just the natural course of things... Although we have created the ritual to control our bloodlust, for the church it doesn't matter, they just seek to eliminate us."

She snorted in disdain: "God, motivations, explanations, and even why you attack me today are just excuses for this unchanging truth. We are the predators, and you are the prey, but... Unfortunately, over time, the situation has evened out, and it has become the contest of two predators. One that will only end when the vampires, or the humans, disappear from the face of the Earth"

"And I can guarantee you, we will be the winners." Ruby finished speaking with a big smile on her face that showed all her sharp teeth.

"...."

All the hunters looked at Ruby in shock, when the Japanese woman saw this, she said:

"As expected, you also inherited your mother's madness, I don't think we should let you live."

"Crazy? Me? Pffff... Hahahahahaha," Ruby laughed lightly.

The Japanese woman just raised an eyebrow in doubt.

Ruby stopped laughing and spoke with a big smile on her face: "Mizuki... I'm the sanest vampire you'll ever meet."

"Are these your last words?" the Japanese woman asked.

Ruby doesn't respond, she just turns her face and looks to the side and shows a shocked expression, but soon a small smile appears on her face. She turns and looks at the Japanese woman, "You guys are so, fucked."

"...Huh?" The woman didn't understand, but when she felt something approaching at high speed, and when she heard the noise of buildings being destroyed, her instincts screamed:

"Step back now!" She ordered.

And as experienced hunters, they quickly listened to the woman's orders, they didn't even dare to question.

Soon a being covered in fire falls from the sky in front of Ruby.

## Chapter 28: The woman who kills Oni.

When Mizuki saw the monster's appearance in front of her, all her instincts screamed danger; she was on full alert. Seeing the monster's appearance, she remembered the information she'd received from the church's pope.

"Remember, Mizuki. Romanian vampires are on a completely different level than what you destroyed in Japan, especially the 'count' class vampires."

"These vampires are like humanoid weapons of mass destruction, and, if that wasn't enough, they have a kind of 'transformation' that taps into the true nature of these vampires' powers. If you meet a vampire like this on your quest, you must step back immediately, after all, you have not yet received the baptisms to become my general."

'Back? I'm sorry, but I won't carry out this order', Mizuki thought with a small disdainful smile.

"On guard! Use level 3 enchantments! Gentlemen, a count class vampire is in front of you, prepare to die if necessary." She yelled as she pulled a fan from her pocket.

"Yes, Mam!"

She opens her fan and speaks in a neutral voice: "Susanoo, Japanese god of the sea and storms, bless my allies with the protection of the seas!"

Suddenly water began to appear at the feet of Mizuki's allies, and slowly this water began to wrap the hunters in a protective layer. And, soon, this water turned into the armor of the ancient Japanese soldiers who fought in the Sengoku period.

"God, bless my fists so I can get my revenge," Carlos spoke while

being covered by Mizuki's armor, his fists started to be covered by golden energy.

Soon all the hunters began to cast spells similar to what Carlos did.

The creature looks at Mizuki with a smile on his face that showed all his sharp teeth, the hunters felt their bodies shiver when they saw the creature's smile, but, before the hunters could do anything, the creature lost interest in them and turns towards Ruby.

"Violet?" Ruby spoke confused, but when she looked at the creature's face, she spoke in shock, "D-Darling? What happened to you? And how did you get this power!?"

Ruby tried to get up but she couldn't, she looked at her wound with an annoyed look; 'this is taking too long to heal, what is happening? I should have resistance to the energy used by the church.'

Ruby looks at Victor's face with a stoic expression, she had several thoughts running through her head right now; 'Why is he here? Why does he have access to this form? I'm glad he's here, but I'm worried about him, he's not strong enough to fight a slayer like Mizuki, we must get away! But I'm glad he's here... I don't want him to die...'

When Victor put his eyes on Ruby's wound, he felt his heart clenching in pain. He wanted to roar in rage, he was almost losing control of his own body. But, as a last show of stubbornness, he managed to stay in a state where he understood everything as if it were a dream.

He was awake and at the same time he was sleeping, but there was only one thing he was sure of, only one thing he wanted to do now;

'I will kill them!'

Suddenly all of the hunters felt as if the world had lost all color for a few seconds, everyone could feel the killing intent so strongly that they forgot to breathe for a few seconds.

Victor turns and looks at the hunters. When the hunters looked at Victor, they felt their bodies suddenly grow heavy... Fear, the purest feeling of human beings, that's what they were feeling now.

They couldn't breathe, they couldn't move, it was like their bodies didn't want to obey and they just froze.

"W-What is it?" A slightly younger hunter asked while shivering. Despite having been hunting vampires for a few years, he's never come across a vampire like this.

"C-C-Calm down" A hunter spoke while stammering a lot.

Victor's eyes started to look around, he seemed to be going crazy every moment, he looked at all the hunters as he opened and closed his fists several times.

Mizuki looks at him neutrally and thinks; he is weaker than I imagined, so she puts the fan in front of her and spoke in a low voice:

"Tsukuyomi, give me the peace of the night, the peace of the night in the moonlight."

White energy focused on Mizuki's fan, and then she waves the fan, and this energy travels towards all of her subordinates.

And, as if it were magic, everyone started to get calmer; everyone felt inner peace, and they didn't feel fear anymore... But, the enchantment didn't last long because Victor suddenly made a move and appeared in front of a hunter.

He opens his mouth full of sharp teeth and bites the hunter's neck, "Ahhhhhh~! Save me! Save-me-" The hunter couldn't scream anymore because soon he had turned into a dry mummy, it was like

he lost all the blood in his body.

Victor stops biting the hunter, and when he lets go of his head, the hunter's entire body disappears into ash; even the hunter's blood that splashed on him disappeared without a trace.

This demonstration made the hunters fearful. The only ones not affected were the more experienced hunters, all thanks to Mizuki's enchantment, and because they had seen something similar in the past.

"He destroyed my armor so easily..." Mizuki couldn't help but comment in disbelief.

'Was I wrong in my judgment...?' She thought confused.

Then she ordered: "This monster's body is very hot, if you don't have high-level protection techniques, don't come close! Or you will turn to ashes!"

"Carlos!"

"Yes, Mam"

Carlos runs towards Victor and punches him in the face, Victor looks at the fist in his face, and soon he smiles like he's not impressed.

"Monster, don't laugh at me!" Carlos attacks him again, but it wasn't working, he couldn't hurt Victor's body.

Victor grabs Carlos' bald head.

Carlos feels his flesh burn as Victor holds his head.

Victor runs towards another hunter and holds them by the head, the friend who was next to this hunter tried to cut off Victor's hands, but the golden sword only scratched Victor's skin.

Victor looks at the two heads he was holding as if they were watermelons, he flashes a big, distorted smile.

Carlos realizing what Victor intends to do quickly uses a defensive spell. Victor hits the heads of the two men together!

CRACK!

Sounds of broken bones were heard by all the hunters nearby.

Carlos managed to survive the attack, but the hunter who was his subordinate had his brain blown out.

Victor grabs Carlos by the neck and throws him at the other hunters with all his strength.

"Ugh! Catch me!" Carlos screamed when he realized he couldn't organize his center of gravity, he started to speak an incantation, and soon his body was glowing golden.

Carlos' subordinates nod their heads and catch Carlos's body.

Before Carlos can do anything, he sees a giant ball of fire flying towards them.

"The fuck..."

BOOOOOOOOOOOM!

"AHHHHHHHHHHH!"

Seeing those fireworks, and hearing the screams of the hunters, Victor's sadistic smile grew in satisfaction.

"We must flee..." A hunter spoke in fear, he swallowed his saliva and yelled, "We cannot fight this monster!"

"Are you going to run away from these demons!? We must kill them!" A more fanatical hunter spoke.

"Fuck it, I'm not going to die over bullshit like that!" When this hunter was about to flee, he hears Mizuki's voice:

"Is that the attitude of a hunter? If you're not prepared to die, you shouldn't be in this job!" She spoke in obvious contempt, she hated that hunter's cowardly attitude.

She ignores the useless men; this monster is strange. He's strong, but he has the feeling of inexperience; he's just using his power directly... Let's try something.

"Bishamonten, give it to me a weapon to destroy my enemies." She spoke in a neutral tone, and her fan began glowing red, then, suddenly, her fan turns into a two-meter-long Odachi.

Mizuki lifts the Odachi with her right hand as if it were not heavy and puts it on her shoulder, and displays a predatory smile. Everyone could feel that the air around Mizuki changed, if before she looked like an elegant woman, now she looked like a wild beast!

Mizuki takes a talisman from her pocket with her left hand, closes her eyes, and holds the talisman in front of her.

"Abe-No-Seimei, lend me your wisdom to defeat this Oni."

The talisman disappeared in blue light, and soon that same light began to cover Mizuki's body. When she opened her eyes, a magic circle was carved in them.

Mizuki crouches a little, and slowly the sword blade starts to be covered in blue energy; she bends her knees and with a thrust, and flies towards Victor like a missile.

When she got close to Victor, she brandished the Odachi diagonally.

Realizing the threat, Victor suddenly disappears in front of Mizuki and appears beside her, then he attacks her trying to rip her head off.

"It's useless," She said smiling while blue energy glowed in her body.

Victor didn't understand what happened, but he suddenly screamed from a pain he'd never felt in his life:

"AHHHHHHHHH!" He screamed like he was a beast being wounded.

"Victor!" Ruby cried out in concern when she saw the cut on his chest.

Victor holds his bleeding chest, slowly, the fire that was covering his body began to weaken considerably.

Realizing this was an opportunity, Mizuki flashed a maniacal smile and brandished Odachi again, this time she wanted his head!

But before her sword ripped off Victor's head, a huge wall of ice appeared in front of her.

Mizuki's Odachi cut through the ice wall easily, but soon she realized the monster was no longer in front of her, she also heard a woman's neutral voice. She turns her face and sees a woman wearing a maid outfit, she looked into the woman's blood-red eyes and realized she was a vampire.

"Sorry but I can't let you kill my master, I haven't had enough headpats yet."

Seeing the darkness covering the maid's feet, Mizuki spoke: "The Kuroyami Clan..."

"Oh? It's been a while since I heard that name." Kaguya flashed a small smile.

Mizuki looks around and sees that the monster was being hugged by Ruby, the monster had a much weaker fire than before, and she also saw that Ruby was using her ice ability to close the wound she

caused the monster:

"When I destroyed the noble vampires of Japan, I looked in their records that talked about a clan of vampires who could control the shadows. They were the best assassins in Japan. A clan of vampire ninja controlled by a noble vampire who had friendly relations with Toyotomi Hideyoshi."

She looked around a little further and noticed that Ruby's maid had disappeared; 'Where is she?'

"They kept records about us... What a surprise, I thought they had forgotten us." Kaguya spoke in an emotionless tone.

Mizuki was looking at the monster with dangerous eyes and with a big smile on her face. With the previous confrontation, she can understand that the monster was inexperienced in fighting; he had great power, that's a fact, but he didn't know how to control it. Power, and not knowing how to control it, in a fight against a hunter is deadly.

'I need to eliminate him, a monster like him can't stay alive; I shouldn't miss this opportunity' She thought with determination.

Cough!

Victor coughed up black blood on the floor, and soon the fire that covered his body began to slowly die, and eventually, his transformation was undone; he was back to normal.

'The poison is taking effect, good. But, this is only temporary, this poison is not strong enough to kill the noble vampires; I need to eliminate it!' Mizuki thought.

"D-Darling!? Are you okay!? Darling!?" Ruby tried to talk to him, but Victor's eyes were unfocused as if he were lifeless.

Seeing the black blood on the floor, Kaguya looked at Mizuki: "What did you do?"

"That is not something you need to know." Mizuki spoke as she positioned herself. She placed the Odachi on her shoulder again, and flexed her knee, she then pulled a talisman from her pocket. The talisman began to glow, and soon she spoke as she threw the talisman at Kaguya:

"Ken, Zo, Fa, Oder!" A wave of flame erupted from the talisman and flew towards Kaguya.

Kaguya looked at the fire neutrally approaching, "Onmyoujutsu, this is something rare these days."

Kaguya's body began to be covered by darkness, and soon two daggers appeared in her hands, she cuts the fire horizontally, and when the fire died out, she saw Mizuki running at high speed towards her.

Kaguya's darkness began to grow, slowly, the darkness began to leak towards the ground, and soon all the ground around her was covered with blackness; it was as if Kaguya had created a 'territory' just for her.

When Mizuki enters Kaguya's territory, suddenly thousands of black hands start coming out of the ground and heading towards Mizuki.

"Tsk, annoying" Mizuki's sword starts to be covered in thunder, and with a diagonal swing, she eliminates all of the shadow hands created by Kaguya.

"Where is she?" Mizuki said as she looked around.

"You hurt my master, that is a serious crime." She heard a voice in her ear.

Mizuki tried to run away, but she couldn't, as soon as she felt a dagger piercing her heart, her face took on an expression of disbelief. It was as if she didn't believe she would be eliminated so easily.

Cough!

She coughed up blood on the floor.

Kaguya pulls the dagger out of Mizuki's heart and when she goes to cut off her head, she hears an ancient and powerful voice:

"Enough!"

A blue power left Mizuki's body, and Kaguya quickly disappears into the shadows and returns to Victor's side.

"A guardian spirit..." Kaguya stared in shock as she looked at the old man who was floating around Mizuki.

The old man waves his fan in his hand and soon the wound Kaguya inflicted on Mizuki began to regenerate at high speed.

He nodded satisfied, and looked at Kaguya with a neutral look:

"Oni, you use very sneaky techniques."

## Chapter 29: The three wives meet.

"Thank you, master," Mizuki said gratefully.

"Foolish disciple, you come to these foreign lands, and the first thing you do is fight without knowing the enemy? I'm disappointed! Did you forget what I taught you!?" The old man ignored Mizuki's thanks and began to lecture her.

"Ugh," Mizuki put a hand to her ear and tried to ignore her master's words, but unfortunately, she could hear the master's sermon in her mind.

Kaguya looked at the old man trying to find some characteristic that would let her recognize him as a historical figure. She knows that spirits are heroes who have fought and fallen in the past, and through magic, they can be summoned. She also knows that this is a technique of invocation that was lost a long time ago.

Seeing the pentagram symbol on the fan in the old man's hand, she understood and discovered who it was: "Abe-No-Seimei"

The old man hears Kaguya's words, stops lecturing his disciple, and looks at Kaguya, then he opens his eyes a little. When Kaguya saw the magic pentagram that was similar to the magic circle Mizuki had in her eyes, she understood that she had guessed right.

"Oh? Do you know me, Oni? And to think that my legends have spread to this foreign continent-"

When the old man was going to continue to say something, he heard the voices of two women.

"DARLING!?"

Violet, Sasha, and Maria arrived and looked at Ruby holding

Victor who had an unfocused look on his face as if he was lifeless.

When Victor heard Violet and Sasha's voice, his blue eyes sparkled a little and he tried to move his hand, but he couldn't. He felt like his body was paralyzed and he couldn't move anything, he could understand and hear everything around but could not move.

Violet jumps towards Victor and starts checking him out, seeing that he was in a very bad state, her eyes started to darken in madness. She looks at Mizuki and says:

"You did it!?"

"I-" Mizuki was going to try to say something, but she was interrupted by Violet's angry outburst.

"YOU DID IT!!" Fire started to come out of Violet's body, the atmosphere around her started to get suffocating, Violet was slowly losing herself in anger.

"Calm down Violet, we need to get away, and heal our husband" Ruby spoke in a cold tone.

As if by magic the fire around Violet disappeared, and her eyes sparkled with clarity, she looked at Victor and bit her lip in frustration; 'I should be by his side! I'm going to kill that bitch!'

Suddenly everyone heard an explosion as if lightning had hit the ground.

"Oni, what are you doing?" The old man asked neutrally as he looked at Sasha who attacked Mizuki who defended herself with her Odachi.

Sasha didn't respond, she just looked at Mizuki with hate in her eyes. Lightning started to crackle around Sasha, and soon she disappeared in a flash and attacked Mizuki again.

"Ugh," Mizuki wasn't able to attack, Sasha was too fast, so she

just assumed a defensive position with her Odachi and protected the vital parts of her body.

The spirit looked at everything with interest, he didn't seem to be interested in interfering in the fight and continued watching everything with curiosity shining in his eyes.

Sasha took the dagger from her legs and started making small cuts on Mizuki's body, the dagger couldn't pierce Mizuki's body.

"Give up, Oni. You can't penetrate my disciple's defenses, you're quick, but you're not strong enough." The old man spoke in a neutral tone.

Sasha's eyes flashed with more hate when she heard the old man's words, she hates the woman for leaving Victor in that state, and she hates the old man for underestimating her.

Sasha's body began to glow yellow:

"Sasha, don't lose your cool! If you use this power for too long, you will be incapacitated!" Ruby exclaimed.

Sasha yelled angrily, "I don't care! I'm going to kill this bitch!"

Boooooom!

Lightning struck Sasha's body, and slowly her body began to change:

Her ears begin to grow and become elongated like an elf, her teeth began to grow and become sharper, she grew a little higher, and soon she turned into a female version of the transformation of Victor.

The only differences were that her body was covered in yellow lightning and that her powers seemed to be concentrated in her legs.

"Another count class vampire..." Mizuki said as she walked away from Sasha, for a moment she looked at the spirit with a hateful look,

she knows that sadistic old man will only help with something if she is about to die.

"General, I e-...MARY!"

Carlos, who had burns all over his body, screamed when he saw Maria from afar.

Maria looked at Carlos for a moment, her eyes gleamed with the desire to go back to him, but the master's order was absolute, she couldn't do anything.

Ruby looked around and noticed that the hunters Victor had fought and not killed were returning to recovered states, she looked at Mizuki and saw that the woman was being healed by some strange technique she was using, the hunters had the upper hand;

'Mizuki is a general with a focus on support, and melee combat, as long as she's alive, we won't be able to eliminate them all, not to mention that old spirit is still around... We have to retreat.'

Ruby analyzed the situation calmly.

Sasha, hearing Carlos' voice, loses interest in Mizuki and looks at Carlos with eyes longing for revenge.

Ruby for the first time got angry, and yelled, "SASHA! Get a grip, decide what's most important to you now! Your revenge or our husband!?"

Sasha turns to face Ruby, she looks at Victor lying on the floor like he's dead and bites her lip in frustration, but soon she makes a decision, she disappears from where she was and appears next to Victor, the only thing the hunters could see was a trail of lightning.

"Wha-"

"I-"

Mizuki looked around and saw that the normal hunters had started to fall to the ground with their necks cut. All of them, who couldn't react to Sasha, were killed by her daggers, the only ones who survived were those hunters who had high-level defensive enchantments, like Carlos.

"We must back off," Sasha spoke as her transformation was undone.

Seeing that Sasha was breathing a bit heavily, Ruby thought; 'She still doesn't control this transformation completely, she was too reckless.'

"Oni... Do you think you're allowed to leave this place?" The old spirit asked as he placed the fan in front of his mouth.

Mizuki picks up and places the Odachi on her shoulder, and speaks while holding a talisman with her other hand, "Kirin, the messenger of the gods, the Oni's are in my sight, and I need your help!"

She positioned herself to run and attack the vampires but stopped when she saw her master motioning her to do nothing.

Ruby looked at the old spirit with a smile on her face, "We don't need your permission to leave this place, get your dick out of your ass, you're just a dead man."

Then she looks at Sasha and Violet, as if indicating for them to do something, the two women smile as if they understand something.

"Oh?" The old man opened his eyes, his expression shifting to disdain. "You think-"

"Just shut the fuck up, you trash. Why don't you go back to the hole you came out of? Didn't your mother teach you to be obedient?" Violet spoke angrily, then she flashes her disdainful smile: "Oh, I don't think she can do that, after all, she was busy satisfying her customers,

she never could teach you anything."

"Heh..." The old man's face began to distort in anger. "You-"

"Now!" Ruby spoke.

Kaguya suddenly disappears into the shadows and enters Victor's shadows. Soon after, Ruby creates a huge ice wall, Violet creates a big fireball and attacks the wall.

Booooooom!

An explosion occurred when the fireball hit Ruby's ice wall, soon an intense fog was created around it. Seizing the chance, Sasha grabs Violet, and Victor on her shoulders, and moves fast, leaving lightning trails behind.

Ruby does the same to Maria and runs a bit after Sasha.

"Children's tricks!" Carlos screamed and punched the air, and with the pressure made by Carlos' fist, he cleared the entire area that was in the fog, when he looked around and saw that there was no one, he shouted angrily:

"They fled!"

Ignoring Carlos' anger, Mizuki looked at her master, "Because you stopped me, I couldn't kill them."

Abe-No-Seimei just sighed in disappointment and looked at Mizuki, "Foolish disciple, you still need to train more..."

Mizuki didn't understand why her master reacted like that, but she didn't think too much, she was used to her master's weirdness.

"What do we do, General?" A hunter who survived asked.

Mizuki looks around and when she sees the mess they've created, she says, "We must retreat... Recover the bodies of the fallen

hunters, and let's go back to our temporary base."

"Good decision," Her master praised.

...

While the hunters recovered the bodies of fallen combatants.

Mizuki's master was in deep thought.

Abe-no-Seimei is the old man's name, he is a unique exorcist at the time he was alive. Even after he died he became a powerful spirit, but even this powerful exorcist who fought countless 'Oni' when I was alive, he was afraid of someone; 'That Akuma is still alive, huh? And she had a daughter... I think the world will end in this era...'

The moment this old exorcist appeared to save his disciple, he could immediately feel the gaze of a beast watching him from afar, and, from that moment, he knew he could not interfere or severely hurt the red-haired woman. He didn't want to die 'permanently' after all, he had a lot of things he wanted to do.

...

In a building several KM away, seven people could be seen, they were wearing a black suit that covers the entire body, and an all-black mask that hides the facial expression of these individuals.

And in front of these individuals was a woman who was wearing black jeans, a black v-neck t-shirt showing a lot of her H-cup size breasts under her shirt, without hiding much skin, especially in the region of her huge breasts, she also wore a short black suit jacket.

"We need to eliminate that newborn, he broke the rules." One of the seven beings who were wearing a mask spoke in an unrecognizable voice, they seemed to be using something to disguise their voice.

"By using his power openly, he's exposed us."

"It must be eliminated."

Three masked men agreed to eliminate the newborn vampire, but the remaining four just remained silent and looking at the woman with a cautious look, after all, they knew very well the temperament of this red-haired woman.

"Fufufu," The woman smiled in a 'gentle' way while her gaze glowed madly, she seemed to be watching something from far away.

The three masked ones stopped talking, and looked at the woman apprehensively; they didn't want to provoke the woman.

Slowly her gentle smile began to change into a crazy smile: "HAHAHAHAHA, interesting! interesting! My daughter... My beloved daughter, whom I carefully raised as a child, found a husband..."

Suddenly, she turns and looks at the seven masked beings, "I heard that the 1st prince's son likes to travel the world, I wonder if I should pay him a visit?"

The six masked beings started to sweat with fear under the mask, they didn't know how to interpret the words of this crazy woman, is she asking a question? Or is she threatening the life of the 1st prince's son? They didn't know, that's why they don't like dealing with this woman.

The seventh masked man who was calmer said hurriedly, "We understand each other, we don't know anything, and we're not going to do anything."

"Huh...? But I asked a question." The woman spoke with a confused face, but her crazy smile never left her face.

The masked man's body trembled in fear, "We know, we know! Lady Scathach is always right! Don't worry, no one will know about what happened."

"We will leave all responsibility for this situation to Lady Scathach."

"Are you going to leave the responsibility to me?" The woman's eyes began to glow dangerously.

"Hiii," The masked man screamed like a little girl, and said, "I mean, we were never here, so this incident never existed!"

The woman's eyes stopped shining, and soon she smiled in a 'gentle' way. "Thanks for the hard work, you guys can go now."

"Yes, Mam." The masked man who shouted quickly responded as if he were a soldier who responded to the superior, and soon the masked man disappears.

The remaining six masked men just looked at the whole situation without words, they didn't understand anything.

"What are you waiting for? Shoo, shoo," She spoke as if she was talking to a dog.

The masked six awaken from their stupor and quickly disappear.

Seeing that the masked ones disappeared, she spoke with a gentle smile:

"Hmm, I think I will visit my daughter."

But soon her expression changed to a serious face, "But first I must sort some things out."

## Chapter 30: Scathach Scarlett.

February 5th. Two days after Victor, Violet, Sasha, and Ruby clashed with the hunters.

Night.

Current Location... The Vatican, headquarters of The Inquisition organization.

In the skies over Vatican City, a red plane was flying at an altitude of over 30,000 feet.

"Lady Scathach, we've arrived," The pilot of the plane informed the woman who was lying lazily with a photo album on her face.

"Hmm?" The woman opens her eyes, takes the photo album from her face, and puts it on the table beside her.

"I'll be back soon, Ruby," The woman spoke, smiling lovingly as she looked at the photo album which started to freeze slowly, and soon it was in a pure ice chest that looked quite sturdy.

The woman stretches a little and, when she does, her big breasts threaten to come out of the blouse she was wearing. But, even with that tempting sight, the pilot showed no reaction or looked at the woman's breasts.

The woman smiled sensually and licked her lips teasingly when she realized the pilot showed no reaction to her beauty.

This pilot attitude towards her was a good thing, she didn't want to change pilots again. The 101 previous pilots made the mistake of looking at her with lust, and today they are buried six feet underground.

As a vampire who has been alive for over 2000 years, she considers herself an old-fashioned woman, looking is okay, but looking with lust is a big 'NO', because of that, she has killed many men in the past...

Well, she admits she's a bit cruel. She likes to tease men and, when these men get lost in lust, she castrates the men and then kills them... In the end, this was all just a hobby for her, a sadistic joke for her to have fun when she was bored.

Scarthach cracks her neck a little. "Let's pay a visit to my friend..." Her face took on a confused expression, "What's his name again? Kratos something? I think it was Zeus?"

"Well, it's not important." She shrugged as if it didn't matter.

"Tony, keep flying over Vatican airspace," The woman ordered.

"My name is Lucas, ma'am..." The man sighed tiredly. When he saw the woman's red eyes glowing a little, he quickly nodded his head, "Yes, Lady Scarthach," He accepted the order.

"Good," She smiled with a cold little smile.

She opens the plane door, smiles a predatory smile, and, with a little kick of her feet, she jumps into the air.

...

"Let me get this straight..." A man with long golden hair and golden eyes speaks with a tired face. He puts his hand on the brow of his face, and says, "I gave the order to search and capture the vampire who stole the finger of Saint Mary, a sacred artifact, right?"

The man had the expression he said; 'I hope you're kidding. You're kidding, right? Please tell me you are kidding.'

"Yes," Mizuki who was called back to the Vatican replied. She had just finished reporting everything that happened in the incident she

was involved in two days ago.

"..." The man's expression crumbles, he looked depressed now.

He sighs once more and presses a little button he has under the table.

Then he leans back in his chair while waiting for the person he just called.

And, before long, just a few seconds later, someone knocks softly on the door and walks in:

"Your Holiness, Alexander" The man spoke in a neutral tone that held a lot of respect.

Alexander, the man with golden hair and golden eyes, looked at the man who just walked in: he looked 25 years old with brown hair and brown eyes, standing at 180 cm tall he was wearing white priest's robes.

"General Kurtz, can you raise the alarm please?"

Kurtz looked at Alexander with a neutral gaze, and without questioning said, "What's the alarm level, Your Holiness?"

"Level 6"

"... Is that demon coming?" He asked in a neutral tone, but Alexander could see he was hiding his fear from him.

"Yes..." Alexander nodded, then continued as he stared at the ceiling, "Actually... She's already here," His eyes seemed to glow golden for a moment.

A sonic boom was heard by everyone present, and then they heard an explosion as if something was falling to the ground.

Boooooom!

The impact was so big that the structures around the impact started to shake a little, it was like a small earthquake.

"W-What? What is it?" Mizuki leaned a little against the wall as she exclaimed in surprise.

Alexander gets up from his chair and, for the first time, Mizuki saw how tall this man was, he was 195 cm tall, and his toned body couldn't be hidden by the white priest's uniform he was wearing. Soon the man walks smoothly towards the window:

"Mizuki, do you know what happened to the former general you took over for?" He asked in a gentle tone.

"He died? But I don't know the details of death," She said.

"Yes... He died, he was a good friend," Alexander said a little sadly, he opened the window and looked at the red-haired woman who had a huge smile on her face that showed all her sharp teeth.

The woman was standing in a huge crater, she gently jumped out of the crater and the moment she puts her feet on the ground outside the crater she was in, the whole area around the woman was frozen. It looks like the woman created her own 'territory' for herself with more than 5 KM of pure ice!

"S-Scathach" Mizuki swallowed a little saliva.

"Indeed," Alexander nodded, "This demon killed the former general, she was 'shopping' at the Vatican, and when our former general tried to 'harass' her... She killed him and left me a letter of complaint claiming that I needed to improve the 'policemen' that protect the Vatican."

Mizuki opened her mouth in shock... She even thought she heard Alexander's words wrong.

"Do you understand what I mean?" Alexander asked as he looked

at Mizuki.

"W-What?" She stuttered.

Alexander sighed, and explained, "You hurt this demon's daughter... What do you think she came here for?"

Mizuki closed her mouth and said nothing... After all, she had thought it would be a good opportunity to kill Ruby who could be a very dangerous vampire in the future. She had even thought that Scâthach's strength was overestimated, after all, she wouldn't dare attack the Vatican alone, right?

Destroying a third-world country is easy for any power in the world, after all, the country that Scathach destroyed in the past didn't have soldiers like the Vatican, but...

"Fuck!" If she had known this information about the former general before, she wouldn't have tried to kill Ruby!

"Your Holiness!" Two voices were heard, and soon two men entered the room where the golden man was.

"General James, and General Leonardo... Prepare for battle," Alexander spoke in a gentle tone as he opened the window and jumped out of the room.

General James, a dark-looking man with black hair and black eyes wearing black priest's robes, was a short man at only 170 cm tall.

James looked out the window, when he saw the woman who had created an ice throne and sat on it while waiting patiently, he looked at Mizuki. "What did you do, woman?"

"Apparently I provoked a monster," Mizuki spoke in a sarcastic tone as she walked towards the window.

"Great...Just, Great," James said in a sarcastic tone, then he jumped out the window and followed Alexander.

"Don't interfere in the battle, Young one," Kurtz said neutrally.

"Yes, I know," Mizuki didn't mind the way Kurtz spoke, after all, she knew these men were older than they looked.

Mizuki looked at the last man in the room, he had red hair and bright blue eyes, and like the three generals and the pope himself, he looked like a 25-year-old adult.

"Hahaha, she's as beautiful as ever... Too bad she's a demon," Leonardo spoke with an arrogant smile, then he followed the two generals.

...

"Hello, Kratos, it's been a while since we've seen each other, I think the last time was two months ago?" Scathach asked the golden-haired man.

The man sighs and says, "My name is Alexander." How many times has he repeated that same phrase over the years?

"Oh, I'm sorry," She said, then she continued as she crossed her legs elegantly, "You know how being old is, you forget things as time goes by."

"You don't look old to me," Leonardo said with a smile on his face, but soon his expression darkened to pure fear as he felt Scathach's sheer killing intent. The moment she saw he was scared with just that, she loses interest, she looks at the man like she's looking at an insect.

Scathach likes talented people, and with just one look, she could tell this man had no potential, he stinks of garbage. To her, this man wasn't even qualified to breathe the same air as her.

"Silence, Dog. I'm talking to your owner."

"Y-you-" He tried to say something again then, immediately, felt

danger coming from around his neck.

Boooooom!

Just as the general tried to say something, Scathach moved and tried to decapitate the man...

"You're crazier than usual, Demon," Alexander said as he held Scathach's wrist.

"I said silence, he must learn to listen to his elders," She spoke with a big smile on her face, then disappears again and sits on the ice throne she created.

She crosses her legs elegantly again while keeping a sensual smile on her face.

Leonardo just stayed silent while sweating a lot, he was just going to lose his life so without any effort; he looks at Scathach and thinks; 'Crazy Bitch.'

"You've gotten stronger." She complimented him with a smile that showed off her sharp teeth.

"Indeed, I've had a lot of time to train," He spoke with the same gentle tone, he didn't seem annoyed that she was trying to kill his general.

"1900 years... Time passes quickly, huh?" She spoke with a bit of nostalgia, she seemed to miss the past.

"..." Alexander was silent; he had the same feeling of nostalgia that the woman has. As a human who gained eternal youth, he too had to go through many difficult farewells.

"I've always had a curiosity..." Alexander said.

"Hmm? Which is?"

"What is the story of your life?" Alexander asked something he always forgot to ask, and the moment he asked that question, all three generals looked at Scathach with curiosity twinkling in their eyes.

"Life story, huh?" She spoke as if thinking deeply, then she smiled and said, "I don't have anything interesting to tell about my life... But once, I met Jesus,"

"... How was he?" After the initial shock, Alexander asked showing more interest than usual.

The three generals will open their eyes in shock.

"He was a silly, and boring, man" She spoke with a smile on her face.

The three generals clenched their fists in anger, but Alexander's expression remained the same.

Soon Scathach continues: "I met him once in the past, he wasn't the 'saint' you believe, he was a normal human, he shits, pisses, and eats... He was a man with great potential; I wanted to train him in the past."

The four men opened their eyes in profound shock... A vampire training Jesus? Is this some kind of prank?

That's what the generals were thinking.

"... I even asked him to be my disciple, but he refused, he preferred to help people than to grow stronger. He was a good-hearted man... Unfortunately, his good heart was what led to his death." She spoke with a disappointed face, she still thinks that if Jesus trained enough, he could have given her a good fight.

The four men remained silent... the three generals had various emotions running through their bodies, they didn't know how to react to this revelation.

Although Scathach didn't care about their existence.

"... He didn't deserve that death," Alexander spoke in a melancholy tone.

"Indeed," Scathach agreed.

"..."

A moment of silence passed between Alexander and Scathach.

Soon Alexander sighs again, he doesn't know how many times he sighed that day, "I'm sorry for what my subordinate did, she will be punished, please can you go back as if nothing had happened?"

Scathach's smile grew and said, "It's impossible. I warned the world in the incident 18 years ago, the message was clear; touch my daughter and you felt my anger."

"You didn't give me any choice then..." Alexander spoke as his eyes began to glow golden, slowly a golden aura began to cover his body.

"My dear," She smiled sensually as she licked her lips, and soon her eyes began to glow blood red, "You had no choice from the start."

## Chapter 31: The Third Wife.

February 9, four days after Countess Scathach Scarlett attacked the headquarters of The Inquisition organization.

Current location, underground of the house where Victor lives.

"Ugh" My head was hurting so bad; I put my hand on my head as I open my eyes. "I am at home...?" I spoke out loud, confused, and sit up in bed.

"Ugh," I place a hand on my head again as soon as I start to remember what happened. "I fought that blond man, then I went to save Ruby, and I was paralyzed by that woman's poison."

I see... And to think that a vampire would be affected by something like poison, that woman must have used something special?

"Zzzzzz," Hearing someone's breathing in their sleep, I look to my right side and see a sight that surprised me a lot...

A woman with long red hair, big breasts, and a curvaceous body was sleeping the same way she came into the world...

"R-Ruby?" I stuttered a little, I was taken aback by this fantastic sight...

Hearing my voice, she seems to have woken up from her sleep. She opens her eyes sleepily, looks at me with her green eyes, and says with a gentle smile, "Darling~"

Hearing her voice, my heart began to pound frantically, my throat went dry, and I felt an uncontrollable urge to bite her neck.

I bite my lip and try to control myself, it seems my bloodlust was

stronger than before. How long did I sleep?

She flashes a seductive smile, stands up a little, and then starts to crawl towards me. When she started to crawl like that, I could see her two white rabbits that looked soft and fluffy, even though they looked 'fierce'; it was such a beautiful sight that it made you want to squeeze and pet those white rabbits.

I look into Ruby's eyes and seeing her seductive expression, I couldn't help but be captivated by the sight; she was so beautiful.

She looked like a succubus that was trying to seduce me.

Slowly she climbs onto my lap, sits on my crotch and wraps her arms gently around my chest, and lays her head on my chest.

When she did that, I could feel her two melons on my chest, she had the biggest ones I've seen so far.

I could feel her steady breathing on my chest, as soon as she pulls back a little and looks at me, I could see her eyes were blood red; I bring my hand up to her face.

She is surprised for a moment, but she accepts my advances, puts her face in my hand, and I soon start stroking her face.

She looks at me with desire shining in her eyes.

"D-Darling~, I can't wait any longer," She spoke as her breath started to come in short pants, she seemed to be wanting too much.

Understanding what she's up to, I hold back my bloodlust and show my neck. The moment I showed my neck, she opens her mouth, and bites me!

I feel my blood being sucked by her, unable to take it anymore, I wrap my arms around her waist, and soon I open my mouth then bite her collarbone!

"Ahh~" She moaned as she stopped sucking my blood, as soon as she wrapped her legs around my waist, I also felt something wetting the shorts I was wearing.

Her blood was so delicious! The taste was something like high-quality ice cream, the icy feeling that her blood gave me; it was an addictive feeling!

"Darling~! Darling~! Darling~!" She kept repeating the word like a broken record as she hugged me tighter, then she bit me again!

Suddenly, my world starts to change, and I was in that abandoned building again.

It all happened the same way I saw it in Sasha and Violet's vision, but now, I could see the sequel, I could see what happened the moment I bit Sasha.

Violet created several fireballs around her. "Die! Bitches!"

When I stop biting Sasha and look at Violet, I notice that I seem to be in a trance-like state, I don't seem to have control of my actions, so I speak in a neutral tone:

"All blood belongs to me."

Suddenly, a dome of blood appeared in front of me and surrounded me and Sasha.

Booooooom!

An explosion happens when Violet's fireballs come in contact with my blood.

"Darling!? Oh my god, what have I done!?" Violet started to despair, but when the smoke from the attack disappeared, she sighed in relief. I could see she was surprised too.

Apparently, I managed to protect Sasha and myself with that

blood dome, as soon as the blood dome disappears, I slowly start to close my eyes and gently fall towards the ground; I seem to have passed out.

"Darling!?" Violet squealed in concern, she approached me with supernatural speed and held me gently.

"I'm sorry, Darling! I- I-" She looked like she was about to cry.

"Calm down, Violet," Ruby said as she held her neck with a neutral expression, but I could see her face was a little troubled; it was like she didn't believe what just happened.

"Calm down!? I almost killed my Darling because of you bitches!" Violet exploded again.

"Don't be unfair, Violet," Sasha said as she held her neck with a worried expression. "Remember that you were the one who called us for help."

"Indeed," Ruby added, then she speaks in a cold voice, "Calm down, and tell us what happened, why are we marked as his wife?"

Violet's face takes on a guilty expression when she hears what Sasha says, but when she hears what Ruby says, she gets angry again. She takes a deep breath and seems to try to hold back her anger, so she sits down on the floor and puts my head in her lap:

"...I think Darling's blood altered the ritual" Violet begins to explain:

"Darling, you have a rare blood type...RH Null Blood." She said while stroking my hair; it seems that by doing that, she managed to calm down more.

"...The Golden Blood...?" Ruby exclaimed in shock, but soon her expression changed to a stoic one: "How is he still alive? This blood is considered a delicacy for vampires, Victor should look like a slice of

very tasty meat with this blood type, but why don't I feel anything coming from him?" She spoke as she put her hand to her lips.

"... This blood type paints a gigantic target on the owner. People with this blood type rarely go beyond 15 years of age, after all, a vampire can smell this scent from kilometers away." After Sasha's initial shock because of Victor, she added.

Violet has stopped stroking my hair and looks at the two women with lifeless eyes: "I protected him... For 16 whole years of my life, I protected him from threats, I hired witches to hide his scent, I killed the vampires that went after him, I made this place my territory solely to protect him..."

When Sasha and Ruby looked into Violet's eyes, they felt shivers all over their bodies.

Ruby looked at Sasha who looked back at her, then they both nodded; they seemed to be talking in code.

Violet looks back at me and continues, "I protected him for 16 years, I protected him until the day he would become mine... My beloved Darling~" She spoke with loving eyes as she caressed me, but soon her expression distorts into hate:

"But, just me taking my attention away from him for a few seconds..." Slowly her voice began to get heavier and soon killing intent so great that it made the air heavier began to leave her body, "It was just a few seconds... And that was enough for a mangy dog to try to mark him!"

"How dare they...? My Darling~! Do they dare try to steal my Darling?! Unforgiveable!"

Booooooom!

Fire started to shoot out of Violet's body in an uncontrolled way, the ground around Violet started to melt, but this fire didn't seem to be

hurting me.

Soon Violet's gaze turns to Ruby and Sasha, "Do you guys want to steal my Darling from me too?"

"Sasha, Now!" Ruby yelled.

Sasha's body starts to crackle with her lightning, soon she disappears in a yellow trail and picks up Ruby like a sack of potatoes, and runs away from Violet.

Booooooom!

An explosion of fire happened, Violet tried to attack Sasha and Ruby again, but the two women had already fled.

Suddenly my vision changed, I was in a place far from the building where I was transformed; I look around and realize I was in a park.

"She's crazier than usual..." Sasha commented in a neutral tone as she stared at a building that was on fire.

Looking at the burning building, I think; 'I wonder how my beloved wife managed to hide this incident from everyone.'

Ruby sighs, "She's pissed at the whole situation..."

"We should stay away for a few days, Violet should calm down now that she's with Victor," Sasha spoke.

"...I'm worried about something," Ruby commented, then she added as she looked at Sasha:

"Do you think Victor will accept Violet...? You know her personality."

"..."

The two women fall into an uncomfortable silence.

"If Victor doesn't accept Violet, I think this time, she's really going to freak out," Sasha spoke with a worried face.

"...Yes." Ruby sighed.

"Anyway, I'm going back home, Luna must be worried," Ruby said.

Sasha nods, and says, "See you later Ruby."

Suddenly the world shatters like a crack in a glass.

...

I open my eyes, and I realize as I come out of that memory, I feel a weight on my right arm. I look to my right side and see Ruby who was lying down while leaning on my arm.

I seem to have fallen asleep for a few minutes again.

Feeling my gaze, she opens her eyes, and looks at me with a seductive smile, "Welcome back Darling."

I look at Ruby, and I feel like I've known her for several years, just like Violet and Sasha, I could understand her completely... I knew what kind of person Ruby was.

A gentle woman on the inside, but one who always has a cold mask on the outside. And, at the same time, she was very aggressive when she wanted something; though she is easily embarrassed when confronted directly with pure feelings.

A simple woman who had to live hiding her feelings, sometimes she just wanted to let go, but she couldn't...

"I-" When I go to try to say something, Ruby gets up on the bed, approaches me, then she kisses me.

Our tongues play with each other for a few minutes, then she stops kissing me and licks her lips sensually.

"...You're way more aggressive than Sasha," I commented with a small smile.

She smiles gently, "Wrong, Darling. I'm not an aggressive woman."

"Hmm?" I look at her curiously.

"I am a decisive woman," She places her hand on my chest and caresses the spot where I was injured by Mizuki, but thanks to Vampire's regeneration, the spot that Mizuki cut me in is unscarred.

"You saved me, and in doing so, you awakened my desire to have you for myself." Her smile changes to a flirtatious smile, "And I always run after what I want."

"Oh? And what do you want?" I asked with a smile.

She brings her face closer to mine, and speaks with a possessive face; for a moment I saw her eyes darken, "I want you for myself, I want you to be my Darling~!"

I felt my entire body shudder in pleasure when I saw Ruby's expression.

"You already have me," I said smiling as I kissed her lightly, then I get up from the bed and pick up Ruby like a princess.

The moment I got out of bed I felt an incongruity, things around me seemed to be lower than I was used to. Did I grow taller?

I see Ruby pouting, and this sight made my heart melt; she was so cute! I put her on the bed, and kneel down.

"I need to see Violet," I said while stroking her red hair, after what I saw in Ruby's memories, I have a huge desire to meet my wife.

I see Ruby's face turn a little red, "Mm," she nodded cutely.

She was very cute! Just like Sasha and Violet, Ruby had a charm of her own that I loved a lot!

Sasha was a strong woman, who was very weak with showing affection, she was easily embarrassed, although she has a possessive side that I love very much.

Violet, my beautiful ice flower, was a woman direct with her feelings, she was possessive and always tried to harm anyone who approached me, and she always put my safety first while forgetting her own safety, she was a person I love.

Stopping to think now:

"My three wives are beautiful vampires, I really am a very lucky man," I spoke in a low tone, but I realized that Ruby heard me, and her face turned a little red with embarrassment.

I laugh a little as I do my best to ignore Ruby's two white rabbits, I walk to the wardrobe, but soon I remember my favorite maid.

"Kaguya," A Japanese woman-looking maid stepped out of my shadow.

"Lord Victor, I'm glad you woke up," Kaguya spoke in a neutral, emotionless tone, but I was sure I could see her eyes shining for a moment.

I look at Kaguya smiling, I open my arms, and say, "Do your magic."

Her black eyes change to blood red, and she flashes a small smile, "As expected, Lord Victor is the best master."

Her body is covered in darkness, and soon she 'passes' through my body and, a few seconds later, I've already changed my clothes.

"Thank you, Kaguya," I said as I stroked her head.

I felt her body tremble, and a small satisfied smile appeared on her face, I also noticed that she looked shorter than usual; I think I really grew up...

"Shall we go, Darling?" I hear Ruby's voice.

Hmm?, I look at Ruby, and I see she's wearing a simple blue skirt, big black tights, and a red shirt that could barely hide her breasts.

Seeing that I had been staring at her breasts for a lot longer than I intended, she smiled seductively. "What are you doing, Darling?"

My face turns a little red, but soon I understand something, she's playing this game, huh? I swallow my shame and say, "I was admiring how beautiful my wife is, I really am lucky."

Suddenly, Ruby's face turned red with embarrassment, she turns her head away and hides her face with her hair.

I display a small smile, "Come on, Honey."

"Mm," Ruby nodded.

I walk to the door and, when I touch the door, I see several green magic symbols appearing. For a moment I was confused, but I just shrugged like I didn't care; when I walk through the door, I hear:

[Now with the latest news: In the Vatican, there was a serious explosion caused by terrorist attacks... The terrorists placed several new bombs created with liquid nitrogen throughout the Vatican. As you can see from the images, the damage caused was immense, more than 70% of the Vatican structures are destroyed]

"Hahahaha, liquid nitrogen bomb? Can't they come up with a better excuse?" I hear the voice of a woman I don't know, I walk a little and see that the woman was sitting on the couch while watching the news.

The woman turns off the television with the remote and turns her head towards me. When our eyes meet, my body froze; I feel like I'm in Alaska, my whole body was cold and, I felt like I was looking at a wild beast that could kill me at any moment. I couldn't move...

She displays a wild smile that, at the same time, was seductive:

"Heh, you finally woke up, 'my' son-in-law..."

....

[A/N: This is the end of volume 1... 75K words were written... I never thought I would do something like this with an original novel... Thanks for everyone's support.

I'm going to take two or three days off, I need to think, organize, and plan the execution of volume 2. If you want to stay up to date on everything, and see character images, join my Discord.

Anyway, see you guys soon, umu!]

## Chapter 32: Son-In-Law

"Heh, you finally woke up, 'my' son-in-law... Did you enjoy sinking your fangs into my daughter's neck?"

Suddenly, I feel my whole body go numb ... Fear, that's what I felt; for the first time in my life, I felt the purest feeling of fear.

My heart was beating wildly, my instincts screamed to run, but I couldn't; my body was paralyzed. I could feel my whole body in a cold sweat as I looked at the woman in front of me, I thought;

'A monster... A real monster was sitting in front of me.'

I swallowed hard; I could feel ... Yes, I could feel with all my being that this monster could kill me at any moment, in front of her, I was just an insect ... In front of this woman, I was just a newborn that she could easily step on.

I clenched my fists tightly. Fear? Yes, I was scared, but I refuse to be paralyzed!

I bit my tongue hard and tasted the blood, but I didn't care; the pain made me regain control of my body.

I felt an irritating feeling in my heart, a feeling that told me not to bow my head to anyone. My pride won't let me!

But besides this irritating feeling I had in my heart, I had another feeling screaming furiously...

I look into the red eyes of the woman who was smiling at me, and I display a smile so big that my face distorts unnaturally.

"Oh~" Her smile grew like my smile.

A strong warrior! A strong warrior was in front of me! An opponent to fight! Ah~! I'm excited!

My whole body is screaming in euphoria to fight her; I could feel it! But I knew an unchanging truth... I was too weak to have a fight that will satisfy my desire! And that irritated me! That frustrated me!

"M-Mother, when did you arrive!?"

The woman ignored her daughter's question and kept looking at me.

"This is really a shame," I said, disappointed.

"Why is this a shame?" She asked in curiosity.

"I'm too weak to fight you... That's really a shame," I sighed at the end.

"..."

I could feel the whole atmosphere in the room freeze unnaturally, and everyone in the room was looking at me with a stunned face.

"Pfft..." The woman's instinct to kill disappeared, and soon she started to laugh.

"HAHAHAHAHAHAHA"

I didn't understand why she was laughing; I looked to Ruby for answers and saw that she had a shocked face as she looked at her mom, she didn't seem to understand why her mom was laughing.

Suddenly the woman stopped laughing and got up from the couch; then she looked at me again: "Interesting! Interesting!" She displayed a distorted smile.

"I like you!"

"Huh...? Thanks...?" I didn't understand why she said that... I looked at the woman in front of me more closely.

She looked like a more mature version of Ruby, she has pale skin, blood-red eyes, long red hair that reaches her waist, and a curvy body that her clothes couldn't hide. She had the most enormous breasts I've ever seen, she seemed to have bigger breasts than Ruby; I think it was H-cup? She was shorter than me by a few inches.

I don't know how tall I am now, but I seem to be bigger than before.

She was beautiful... Beautiful would be a little enough compliment to describe all her beauty, a hot beauty, a crazy beauty, a woman who would make any man go crazy with just a simple gesture, but she wasn't just that...

She was a warrior ... A bloodthirsty warrior, a warrior who had some screws loose in her head just like me.

That's the impression I had of her.

She approaches me and starts looking me up and down, "Oh? It looks like your evolution gave you more potential than I expected... Interesting..." For a moment, I saw her eyes glow red.

"Ugh," I hear Violet's voice. "This Bitch... One day I'm going to kill her."

I withdraw my attention from the woman, look at the couch, and see my beloved wife with an irritated face.

I ignore the woman in front of me and walk over to Violet.

"Heh..." Her face distorted a little, but I didn't care.

I stop in front of the couch and see Violet, who was wearing only a black nightgown, she was mumbling in a distorted tone about how she was going to kill that woman who was Ruby's mother.

I sit down on the couch and pull Violet onto my lap, "Kyaaa!" She squealed in surprise.

"Darling...?" She looked at me confused, but soon her face filled with genuine joy and hugged me possessively!

"Darling~! Darling~! Darling~!"

"I missed you," I said honestly as I hugged her.

I felt Violet's body shake, and she looks at me with a tearful face, "I-, I was worried that you wouldn't wake up anymore..."

I wipe the tears from Violet's eye, and I hug her tighter and lay her head on my chest,

"Shh, I'm here, Okay."

"Mm,"

While Violet and Victor are in their own world, Sasha approaches Ruby and speaks in a low voice,

"He just ignored your mother...?" She commented in disbelief.

"...Yes"

Ruby looks at her mom, she was hoping her mom was pissed off, but to her surprise, her mom had a 'happy' smile on her face.

Seeing that smile, Ruby's body shivered, she knew her mother very well, and from what she understands of her mother, she only shows that smile when she finds something interesting,

"Luna!" Suddenly Scathach spoke.

"Y-Yes!?" Luna squealed in surprise.

Luna, who was silent along with Natalia, Maria, and Kaguya in the corner of the room, runs to Scathach's side.

"Thanks for contacting me, you did a good job...But now I want you to do something for me." Scathach whispered something in Luna's ear.

"Yes, Mam!" Luna responded, like a soldier responding to his superior, then she ran out of the room.

When Ruby heard her mother's words, she looked at Luna with a look that said she would give her punishment for having a big mouth.

"Huh...?" Violet, who was in her world with Victor, suddenly looks at Scathach, who yelled loudly.

"Bitch, begone, why are you still here? The room will stink of antiquity, shoo, shoo."

"Heh, looks like you want to get punished again, brat?" Scathach's eyes sparkled a little.

Violet's body shuddered, and she hugged Victor tighter, "Darling, I'm being bullied~."

"She doesn't learn, huh? Doesn't she understand that your mother is vindictive?" Sasha commented as she looked at Violet; a bit annoyed, she thought; 'she's taking advantage of the situation...'

"Well, she's Violet, she doesn't have any sense," Ruby added.

I look at Violet and see her face saying, I want to be spoiled! She was so cute I couldn't resist; I put my face close to her and kiss her!

"Humpf?" She looked surprised for a moment, but as soon as she kissed me again, our tongues began to battle for dominance.

Slowly, my bloodlust exploded; I felt my teeth start to change and also felt my eyes shift to blood red.

"Ugh~!" I stop kissing Violet and look at the two voices; as soon as I see Ruby and Sasha with red faces, I could clearly feel what they wanted; I could feel it from our connection that got so much stronger than before.

"Eat," I spoke in a low voice, but strangely my voice resonated throughout the room.

"Oh...?" Scathach displayed a curious smile.

Suddenly, Sasha disappears and appears at my right side; as soon as she opens her mouth and bites my neck, I felt my blood drain.

Violet puts her face on the other side of my neck and licks me; then, she bites me too.

"Let go of me!" I heard Ruby's furious scream. When I look at Ruby, I see my wife is being held by her mother.

"Interesting." She said. "She was completely lost in the desire for blood."

I suddenly feel a desire to be 'full', and that desire has taken over my actions, and that desire was affecting my wives too.

Violet, Sasha, and I look at Ruby's mom,

"Release!"

We speak in unison.

The woman's body trembled a little, and then she lets go of Ruby,

"Huh...?" The woman exclaimed in surprise, she looked at her hand and realized she wasn't holding her daughter anymore.

Ruby disappears and appears on my left side, "Darling~, Darling~" Soon, she bites my collarbone.

The moment she bites me, I feel 'complete'.

When the desire to feel 'full' has been sated, my bloodlust exploded again. I couldn't think of anything; I was very thirsty, and I just wanted my wives' blood! I open my mouth and bite Violet's neck.

"Ahh~, Darling~."

Seeing Victor feasting on the blood of his three wives, Scathach's smile grew distorted,

"Kaguya, explain to me everything that happened from the moment that Victor was turned," She ordered.

Kaguya approaches Scathach, she looks at the woman for a few seconds as if thinking about something, then she makes a decision; 'She is Ruby's mother, she has a right to know the truth.'

"It all happened the day Violet turned Victor into a vampire-," Kaguya began to explain in a neutral tone all the events she knew.

## Chapter 33: Son-In-Law 2

Hearing everything that happened, Scathach's smile just grew and grew.

When Kaguya finished explaining everything that had happened since the moment Victor turned into a Vampire.

"What's his blood type?" She asked curiously.

"RH Null Blood... The golden blood."

"Pfft... HAHAHAHA!" She started laughing like she was crazy.

Kaguya just looked at the woman, wondering if this madwoman was right in her head.

"And to think... Pfft... And to think that history would repeat itself with my daughter...? HAHAHAHA!" She looked very happy for some reason.

"Countess Scathach knows about something?"

She stopped laughing for a moment and looked at Kaguya with a slight smile on her face, "Who knows? I'm quite old; maybe I'm just crazy?"

Kaguya's face twitched a little, she didn't expect her to respond like that.

Scathach exhibited a soft smile on her face, took a deep breath, and let the air out of her lungs. "It's been a while since I laughed like that. When was the last time? I think about 500 years ago?"

Kaguya, seeing the woman's H-cup breasts sway as she made this simple gesture, just clicked her annoyed tongue.

Scathach walks slowly towards Victor with a smile on her face, she sits on the sofa that was next to the one that held Victor and his wives, she crossed her legs sensually and spoke with killing intent leaking from her body:

"That's enough, have some kind of respect for yourself; doing that in front of everyone is inappropriate."

The instinct of the four exploded, warning of danger; they quickly broke apart and rose from the couch, prepared to fight.

"Hmm, the reaction is fast, but not good enough."

"M-Mother?"

"Wipe your mouth, daughter, how inappropriate."

Ruby's face turns bright red, and she quickly licks her lips; 'I can't believe I did this in front of my mother!'

"Sasha Fulger, I hear your mother lost her vampire count title on some stupid bet, as expected of her."

"Yes, as expected of her," Sasha nodded in disdain as she licked her lips.

"Violet Snow, I heard your father woke up. Do you intend to come home?" Scathach asked.

"Hmm? I am not. My house is next to my Darling~" Violet spoke as she hugged Victor.

I looked at Violet and smiled kindly, then patted her head, "Hehehe" Seeing the goofy smile on her face, my heart melts into cuteness.

I look at Kaguya, "Kaguya, do your magic."

Understanding what I mean, Kaguya nods, and then disappears

into darkness, then she covers Violet's body in darkness. Like magic, Violet's outfit has changed from a nightgown to an outfit that looks like a cosplay she always wore.

"Done"

"Good Job, Kaguya," I said as I stroked Kaguya's head.

"..." Her body shook a little, and she turned her face away.

Soon, I stop petting Kaguya and sit down on the couch again; Violet sits on my right side, Ruby sits on my left side, and Sasha, who was a little embarrassed about the whole situation, sits next to Ruby.

And Kaguya was behind me along with Natalia and Maria.

I look at the woman, "We haven't introduced ourselves yet, right?" I display a gentle smile.

"My name is Victor Walker; nice to meet you, Mother in law," Again, I feel the atmosphere around me tense up, as if I've said something wrong.

"...Heh" The woman displays a dangerous smile and licks her lips, "Nice to meet you, Victor. I am Ruby's mother; my name is Scathach Scarlett."

"Now that we've introduced ourselves let's talk about important matters." I keep smiling.

"Oh?" She looks curious about what I'm going to say.

"I want to ask your permission to be with Ruby."

The woman's smile suddenly disappears.

"D-Darling, this is too fast!" Ruby looked at me with fear evident on her face.

"Yes, Darling. You must talk to my mother first!" Violet spoke jealously.

"Idiot, that's not what she's talking about! Read the room!" Sasha yelled at Violet.

"Huuuh?" Violet was confused.

Question marks started appearing around me, and I was confused why they were reacting like that.

"Brat, don't you understand your situation?" Ruby's mother spoke in a neutral tone.

"I understand my situation," I said as I looked at her, "I married your daughter, and I didn't ask your permission for that, right?"

"Indeed... That's it." She looked at me with a stunned expression.

"Don't worry, I intended to do this with each of my wives," I commented with a small smile.

"Heh..." She flashed a small smile, "What are you going to do if I don't allow you to be with Ruby?"

"M-Mother!?"

"Silence, Ruby." Her eyes glowed red for a moment.

"Y-Yes," Ruby recoiled.

"Answer me," She looked at me again.

The answer to that question was simple, "I don't intend to do anything."

"Huh?"

"Huh?"

Ruby and her mother exclaimed in unison.

I continue with a slight smile on my face, "At the end of it all, your opinion on this matter doesn't matter much," I commented honestly.

"Brat-"

I interrupt, "Ruby is already married to me; what I'm doing here is just a formality. Whether you allow it to happen or not, it doesn't matter anymore."

I look at Ruby, "All that matters is Ruby's willingness; if she wants to be with me, then I'll make it happen."

"D-Darling," Ruby spoke with a red face and a small happy smile on her face; it was pretty obvious she wasn't against it.

"Brat, you're talking too loud for someone who doesn't have the strength," Scathach spoke in a venomous tone as her killing intent seeped from her body, she looked quite annoyed.

I look at Scathach, and I explain, "Yes. I'm weak now, but sometimes you can't solve some situations with brute force."

"Heh," She flashed a sneer, "If I kill you now, you can never be with my daughter."

I saw Sasha, Ruby, and Violet's faces distorted in anger for a few seconds.

"Think with me... If you kill me now, what will happen?" I asked in a neutral tone.

"I would bring my daughter back home, that's all."

"What about her bloodlust? You know the ritual."

"She can handle it. After all, she is my daughter; if I can handle this bloodlust, she can too."

Oh, she lost her husband...? Come to think of it; I don't know much about my wives' families, the only one I know a little better is Sasha's family.

"Naive," I commented.

"Huuuh?" Her face was distorted.

"You are naive; your way of thinking is very naive," I said, then I continue:

"Ruby isn't you. If I disappear, what guarantees she won't go crazy from bloodlust?"

"..." She was silent as she looked at me.

"And even worse, what guarantees she won't hate you?" I asked, smiling a little.

"Huh?" She put on a confused face: "She would hate me...? Her own mother...? That is impossible."

"Why is it impossible? You've already lived a long time, right? From the way you speak, I can say that." I said and added, "Then you must know how easily a child can hate their parents."

"...." She bites her lip, and I see her eyes glow blood red.

"That's why I said; it doesn't matter if you approve of Ruby and me. In the end, I'll still stick with Ruby." I spoke neutrally and added, smiling happily, "I just became something irreplaceable for Ruby, and you can't do anything about it."

"Indeed..." Scathach lowered her head a little, her bangs hiding her eyes, and soon she started biting her nail.

I could feel Ruby shaking a little as she held my hand; I looked away briefly and saw that Sasha was very alert, it looked like she was ready to do something if the situation called for it.

"Darling, this is dangerous; you've said too much," Violet spoke seriously in a low voice.

I just smile and pat Violet's head; I look at Scathach again:

"Scathach Scarlett,"

"Hmm?" She looks at me, and when I see her eye gleam, for a moment, I feel my whole body tremble with fear and excitement. But, then, I display a big smile that shows all my sharp teeth:

"Wouldn't killing me be a waste?"

"Waste?"

"The moment I saw you. Do you know what I felt?" Finally, I decide to be honest.

"...." She kept looking at me.

"Afraid...I feel scared, but I also feel disappointed and frustrated."

"Oh...?" She displayed a big smile.

I get up from the couch and walk slowly over to Scathach. I kneel on the floor and look into her red eyes; I touch it lightly and caress her face:

"A strong opponent was in front of me, but I didn't have enough strength to face it... So I couldn't satisfy my desire to fight... This is really frustrating."

Her red eyes that were glowing seemed to lose intensity, then her smile grew in a distorted way that showed all her sharp teeth; this smile just made me more excited, but...

"This is really disappointing."

"Indeed," I agreed.

I stop stroking her face and pull away.

When I look at my wives, I just saw them looking at me shocked; even Natalia, Maria, and Kaguya, who are always stoic, were looking at me with their mouths open.

'Why are they reacting like this?' I thought.

When I sit down on the couch again and look at Scathach, I was taken aback by the gentle expression she was showing, she was so beautiful...

I feel Violet and Ruby pinching my leg, and as soon as I wake up from my stupor, I look at my wives and see my wives' annoyed expressions.

"Ruby... My beloved daughter, I allow you to be with Victor," She spoke with a sensual smile, she looked completely different from a few moments ago.

"Huh...? Thanks, Mother!" Ruby thanked her.

"I decided something too." Suddenly Scathach disappears and appears in front of me, and with a simple gesture, she attacks my stomach.

"Cough," I was breathless from the sudden attack, and soon I felt another attack on my neck that made me lose consciousness; everything happened so fast that no one could react...

"Mother!?" Ruby squealed in surprise.

"What are you doing, Bitch!? Drop my Darling!" Violet yelled angrily.

Realizing what was happening, lightning starts to crackle in Sasha's body, and she screams angrily:

"Let go of my husband!"

Scathach ignores Violet and Sasha's threats, she holds Victor like a sack of potatoes and speaks with a sensual smile as she licks her lips:

"I'm kidnapping my son-in-law."

"Huh!?" The three women exclaimed in unison; before they could do anything, Scathach disappears along with Victor.

## Chapter 34: Victor has been kidnapped!

"BITCH!!" Violet screamed in uncontrolled fury, her face was distorted with rage, and the fire poured out of her body uncontrollably.

Realizing the danger of getting close to Violet: Maria, Natalia, Ruby, and Sasha quickly run away from Violet.

"Calm down, Violet!" Ruby screamed, and when she heard the sound of thunder, she looked at Sasha, who was covered in lightning; she looked like she was about to do something.

"You too, Sasha! Calm down!"

"Calm down...!?" Sasha's face twisted in anger, "My husband has been kidnapped. How can I be calm!?"

Ruby started to get angry.

"You fools..." Ruby's voice started to get cold, and the room started to get terribly cold, then she spoke in a tone that made the maids shiver, "...Have you forgotten where you are? Control your powers."

"..."

Listening to what Ruby said, Sasha and Violet bite their lips in frustration and regain consciousness, so they quickly rein in her powers.

Ruby sighs, "This place has protection, but what if you decide to get out of hand now? Do you want to hurt Darling's parents!?"

"You're right..." Sasha sighs, "What should we do now?"

Violet doesn't say anything, she just looks at Ruby, waiting for her

words.

"My mom won't hurt our Darling," Ruby started to explain, "Remember, what happened in the past when a man she didn't think was 'suitable' approached me?"

"...They were exterminated..." Sasha replied.

"Wrong, their entire family was wiped out," Violet added.

"See?" Ruby smiled, "My mom approved of Victor, that means he'll be fine... I think..."

"Huh...? You're not sure!?" Violet raised her voice.

"Violet, you know my mother, she is very unpredictable."

"..."

Violet bit her lip in frustration as she muttered various forms of torture she intended to do to anyone who touched Victor.

"I think she's going to train Victor?" Sasha, who was a little calmer, spoke.

"...You're right...She likes people who have potential..." Ruby nodded.

"And my Darling is a man with great potential; what do you think will happen to him?" Violet asked as her eyes darkened.

"Hmm..." Ruby was silent, she didn't want to answer that question.

"This got interesting, right?" Natalia suddenly spoke with a smile on her face.

Violet, Ruby, and Sasha look at Natalia with a neutral gaze.

"Natalia, we should go home," Violet said.

"I know... But you guys need to sort something out first," Natalia said as she pointed up.

"...You're right; Darling's parents are going to be worried," Ruby said.

"How are we supposed to do this? I don't think telling the truth would be the ideal option." Sasha asked, then she adds,

"A few days ago, Violet had to lie and tell Victor's mom over the phone that she was going on her honeymoon with her son. I think this lie won't work again, I don't know how long it will take, but this time, I think it will take months for him to come home."

Ruby puts her hand on her chin and starts to think about what to do.

"Where is Kaguya?" Violet asked.

"Oh, she's in Victor's shadow," Natalia replied.

"..."

The three wives all open their mouths in shock. "She's fast..." Sasha spoke.

"As expected," Ruby smiled.

"Good job, Kaguya! I'm going to raise her salary!" Violet displayed a happy smile.

"Why are you so happy?" Sasha asked curiously.

"Kaguya is a dedicated Maid, she will send me Darling's location!"

"Oh, you're right," Sasha nods in agreement.

"Violet, Sasha, use your head..." Ruby spoke in a neutral tone.

"Huhh?"

"Huhh?"

Ruby explains, "If my mom kidnapped Victor, she probably took him to that place."

"..."

"Fuck," Violet didn't like it at all.

"That place, huh?" Sasha puts her hand on her chin, and she looks at Ruby; Sasha's eyes suddenly darken, "Ruby, are your foster sisters in that place...?"

Violet turns to face Ruby, she has the same face as Sasha.

Ruby started to sweat a little when she saw Sasha and Violet's faces, but soon she replied, "Yes... They'll be in that place..."

"Fuck!!!" Violet's anger explodes again, and soon her body is covered in fire, she looks at Natalia,

"Open the portal! I'm going back home! I have to protect my Darling!"

"Yes, Lady Violet," Natalia wasted no time, she snaps her finger and then smiles, "Done."

Before Ruby and Sasha could react, Violet opened the door and walked through a portal that looked like the galaxy.

Sasha's body started to crackle with lightning, but before she could follow Violet, her body was frozen by Ruby. "You won't run away now; you must work something out with me first."

"Natalia, close the portal."

"Yes, Lady Ruby," Natalia snaps her finger, and soon the portal that looked like a galaxy disappeared.

Ruby unfreezes Sasha.

"Why did you stop me!?"

Before Ruby can say anything, she asks Natalia, "What is someone from Clan Alioth doing with Violet? Shouldn't you just serve the king's family?"

"This is a secret..." Natalia smiled gently.

"Tsk," Sasha clicked her tongue in annoyance. Then, knowing she won't get Natalia's answer, she loses interest.

She thinks for a moment and looks at Maria; her eyes glow a little blood red, and she says: "You can act normally."

Maria's body trembles a little, and soon she regains control of her actions.

"Why did you do that...?" Maria asked in a cold, suspicious tone.

"I just don't want you to die for a random vampire when we get back home," Sasha spoke in an emotionless tone.

"Huuuh...?" Maria didn't understand why she did it.

Ruby, who was watching all this, said, "Come on, Sasha, we have to go somewhere."

"Okay," Sasha agreed.

"Natália, wait for us here; we're going to need your skill... And keep an eye on her." Ruby pointed at Maria.

Natalia bowed a little, "Your wish is my command, Lady Ruby."

...

The evening that same day.

"I was trying to guess why you needed me to change my clothes into this simple outfit..." Sasha spoke in disbelief as she stared at the door of Victor's parents' house...

Sasha was wearing simple pants that looked too tight on her thighs, she was wearing a long brown shirt with a 'V' neckline that showed a little bit of her F-cup breasts.

"...Y-You are crazy?" Sasha spoke in a stutter while her face was a little red with embarrassment.

Ruby was wearing simple black pants, she was wearing a simple red shirt that could barely hide her G-cup breasts.

"Y-Yes..." Ruby's face seemed to be frozen.

"Ruby?" Sasha approached Ruby.

"Are you nervous?" She asked as she looked at Ruby's face stoic.

"N-Nervous?" she stuttered; seeing the smile on Sasha's face, she said, "I'm fine!"

"Shh! Speak quietly!" Sasha yelled.

"...." Ruby just looked at Sasha with a blank expression.

"Let's get this over with." She spoke in a neutral tone.

Ruby clicked on Victor's doorbell.

They heard the bell, and the two women wait anxiously for someone to open the door.

"I am going!" Suddenly they hear a woman's voice.

Both girls' hearts nearly came out of their mouth when they heard the voice of the woman who was clearly Victor's mother.

When the door opens, and they see a beautiful woman with long black hair and sapphire blue eyes, they can't help but think that this woman is a lot like Victor.

"Hmm, who are you?" The woman looked at the two women as if sizing them up, then she looked at Ruby's bust for a moment, and she thought; 'So big! Is she bigger than mine!?'"

The woman looked at Sasha's legs and thought, 'her legs are so thick.'

She looked at the appearance of the two women again and thought, 'I don't remember meeting a blue-eyed blonde with such thick legs and a green-eyed redhead with breasts bigger than mine.'

Ruby's face was so red at this point that her brain wasn't thinking straight, "M-Mother, W-We are Victor's two wives. Nice to meet you!"

"Huuuh?" The woman's brain stopped working.

"R-Ruby!!" Sasha's face turned red with embarrassment, she approaches Ruby's ear, "What are you doing, idiot!?"

Ruby looks at Sasha with red eyes, almost crying, and speaks, "I don't know anymore!"

"...Ugh, fix the misunderstanding quick!" She whispered, almost screaming.

"Why don't you help too!?" Ruby whispered.

"Don't ask for the impossible!"

The woman has come out of her stupor, and she looks at the two women again, "What did you two say?"

Sasha was startled by the sudden question, "Ahhh! Mother, we are Victor's wives! Nice to meet you!"

"..."

"Idiot!" Ruby yelled.

"Oh, my boy has two more wives..." She didn't think it was a lie. As an experienced lawyer, she knew when someone was lying, and these two girls weren't.

Suddenly the woman touched her head and looked sick, and slowly, she starts to fall.

"M-Mother!?" Ruby and Sasha yell in unison; they quickly grab the woman and see that she was unconscious.

...

Ugh, my head is hurting... Where am I?

I look around and see I was in a room I didn't know. The room looked old; I felt like I walked into those old movies.

"Heh, you finally woke up, stranger."

Suddenly I heard a woman's voice, I look towards where I heard the woman's voice, and I see a girl with wild long red hair; she was on the ceiling of the room standing as if gravity didn't affect her. But then, the girl fell to the ground and stood up.

She was very short; I think she must have been Kaguya's height. She was wearing a simple red dress, she looked at me with a big smile on her face.

Suddenly, I remember what happened, and I get out of bed.

"Wow, you're big," I heard the girl's voice, but I ignored her; she seemed to be talking about my height. I look around and see a

window, I walk towards the window, and when I see the world outside,  
I couldn't help asking out loud:

"Where in the seven hells am...?"

## Chapter 35: Vampire World.

A dark city with architecture that reminded me of medieval times. A place where the sun never rises; a place where every corner is an unknown danger; a city that was built thinking about the nature of vampires. That was the impression I had when I first looked at this city.

"Welcome to Nightingale, The City of Moonlight, Stranger~," I heard the girl's voice.

I look at her and ask, "Who are you? And where am I...?"

"Me? My name is Lacus," She replied, but suddenly another voice added:

[Lord Victor, you are in the world of vampires, be careful when acting.]

"Kaguya?" I called confused, I look around, and I don't see her, but when I looked at my shadow, I saw Kaguya's shadow; she seemed to have a slight smile on her face.

"Kaguya...?" The girl looked confused.

"Nevermind," I said, trying to change the subject.

I look down and see that I was in a nightgown, "Where are my clothes?" The girl didn't say anything, she just pointed to a spot.

I look at the place and see a small dresser with black clothes on top; I walk over to the clothes and pick them up, "Black suit, black shirt, and black gloves..." I look at the woman:

"Why is everything black?"

"Mother ordered it" She spoke in a neutral tone.

"Scathach..." I said with a smile on my face.

The girl's red eyes suddenly glowed blood red, "It's Countess Scathach for you ... Have respect, stranger."

"Heh," I smiled with a distorted face and said, "Where's Scathach?"

Suddenly the woman's killing intent exploded, she opened her mouth, and I could see that her teeth were sharper.

I just looked at her with a smile on my face as I thought; her killing intent is much weaker than Scathach...

[Sigh, Did Lord Victor acquire suicidal tendencies when his evolution ended? Why are you teasing her?]

"I just didn't like the way she talked to me; that's it," I spoke out loud while ignoring the girl and putting on my clothes.

After experiencing the pressure of my mother-in-law, I got numb; I think this girl is strong, but my instincts don't scream danger like when I faced my mother-in-law.

Finishing dressing, I looked at the girl who was still staring at me, "Won't you guide me?" Finally, the girl's pressure disappeared, and she looked at me with a bit of shock on her face.

"What?" I asked

"Why aren't you being affected?"

"Oh?" I smiled a sharp toothy grin at the girl:

"After feeling the pressure of my mother-in-law, I got numb, and it doesn't seem to affect me anymore."

"M-Mother in law?" She stuttered in shock.

"Yes, I'm Ruby's husband, didn't you know?"

"N-No! Mother just threw you in here and told me to keep an eye on you!" She practically yelled red-faced.

Why was she embarrassed?

"That's something she would do, now... Will you guide me?" I asked.

"Yes! Hahahaha, if I knew you were my sister's husband, I wouldn't treat you like that! Come on; I'll take you to my mother!"

The girl's attitude suddenly changed when she found out I was Ruby's husband... And why did she believe me so easily? Isn't she very innocent?

...

Walking through the house, building... Mansion... I don't know anymore; this place is too big...

I look around; I think this is a mansion...

And, despite being a massive mansion, it was very empty.

"How many vampires live in this place?"

"Me, Pepper, Siena, Ruby, and our mom... There's Ruby's personal maid who is Luna, but she's doing something for my mom now."

"I see," I actually didn't understand why this place was so empty, but she didn't seem like she was going to explain anymore.

Soon I hear Kaguya's voice:

[Unlike other Count houses; Countess Scathach doesn't have many subordinates. After all, just her alone is enough to sustain the title of vampire Count...]

"Strange, why aren't any Count houses attacking her?" I asked out loud as I ignored Lacus' confused face.

[They are afraid of retaliation. Countess Scathach is just too strong, and the Count houses are prohibited from fighting each other on the orders of the king.]

"But that doesn't apply to noble houses, huh?" I spoke when I remembered that my wife Sasha's family lost the Count title through a 'game'."

[Yes. Any noble house can request a 'game' with a Count house, but they must be prepared for retaliation if they lose.]

"Oh? Explain," I was interested.

"Are you crazy, brother-in-law? Why are you talking to yourself?" Lacus asked.

"I like to talk to myself," I reply, smiling.

"Oh..." She turned her face and kept walking, but I could hear, "Is Ruby right in her head to choose this madman as a husband?"

My smile almost broke when I heard her calling me crazy...

I hear Kaguya's voice again:

[The rules are simple, houses with the title of Counts cannot fight each other, nor can they request a 'match' for the noble house, after all, this would be considered an abuse of power. Because typically vampire Counts are vampires who have lived over 1000 years and have already accumulated a lot of influence and strength.]

[If the noble house loses the game with the Count's house, they

have to be prepared for retaliation. Vampire Counts are prohibited from attacking the lowest nobles, but there is a rule where this does not apply when the noble house attacks the vampire Count's house]

Hmm, as I understand it, it's a system that benefits the noble houses, the families that have the title of 'Count' cannot fight each other, and they can't ask for a 'game' to fight the noble houses that have no title either.

But the houses of nobles that have no title can ask for a 'game' with the houses of Counts at any time.

Hmm... "What are the consequences of losing this 'game'?"

[If the 'game' is betting a nobleman's title, and both parties agree... The consequences of losing this game are everything...]

"Everything?"

[Yes. They lose everything, all riches, all possessions, and even vampires become 'property' of the loser]

"What did you say...?"

An irritating feeling started to grow in my heart, and soon it spread through my entire body.

"Kaguya," I called.

"Oh...?" Lacus looked interested in what was going on.

Kaguya steps out of my shadow, and I look at her, "What do you mean by 'properties?'"

"...Exactly what the word means, all vampires in that house become the loser's property, they become 'slaves'," Kaguya spoke coldly.

"Heh..." My smile distorts, but it's not from fun; it's from hate...

My beloved wife's family lost a 'game' recently.

Just imagining my wife being 'owned' by someone else, this hatred spreads throughout my body; it was like a fire that burned throughout my body.

"Hahaha... This can only be a bad joke... Is my beloved Honey someone else's property...?" I lean against the wall as I put my hand on my chest; my heart was beating too fast, "Unforgiveable!"

Crack!

I heard the wall break with the force I put in, but I didn't care.

"Lord Victor, calm down," Kaguya approaches me and starts massaging my chest, "We still don't know if that's what happened; you need to calm down and control your instincts."

Crack! Crack!

I tighten my grip on the wall, and soon the wall collapses.

I take a deep breath and force a gentle smile onto my face, "You're right, Kaguya; I need to learn more."

I stroked Kaguya's head, and somehow it made me calmer:

"Thank you"

"Mm," She nodded as she smiled.

I look down the hall, and soon my vision changes to a blood-red world, I see three female vampires in this place, one female vampire was in a room that looked like a bathroom, and the other two were sitting in a room that looked like a bedroom.

For a moment, one of the vampires who was sitting looked at me and smiled.

"I found her." I smile, I see Kaguya stepping into my shadow, and then I run towards my mother-in-law.

When Victor ran towards Scathach, Lacus, who was nearby, just stared at the wall that had been reduced to ash when Victor left.

"Oh? Isn't that the Snow Clan skill...?" Her eyes sparkled with curiosity.

...

Two women with long red hair and red eyes were having a red 'tea' while looking at the moon.

"So why did you kill your husband?" Scathach asked the woman beside her in a neutral voice.

The woman next to Scathach was wearing long black stockings, a short blue dress, and black high heels:

"He approached me just to be on good terms with you, Mother," She explained.

"The usual?"

"Indeed," The woman nodded.

"Siena, my beloved eldest daughter, why don't you create a 'husband'? I already made this suggestion... how long ago was it?"

"700 years ago."

"Yes," Scathach smiled gently:

"My memory is a little bad because of my old age." She laughed seductively.

Siena just rolled her eyes when she saw her mother attitude:

"I don't want to create a 'husband'. After all, that isn't going to be something 'real' like I'm looking for."

"Heh, despite being over 700 years old, you're still naive."

"I'm not naive; you know that I just want something 'real', and male vampires are just obsessed with things like 'titles'."

"Why don't you turn a human then?"

Siena's face twisted in disgust, "Turning cattle into a husband? No, thank you."

Scathach rolled her eyes at the eldest foster-daughter's attitude, soon she lost interest in the subject and looked toward the bedroom entrance with a big smile on her face.

Seeing her mother's smile, Siena thought; 'looks like she found something interesting to do again.'

Suddenly the bedroom door was broken, and Victor appeared.

"Scathach." Victor looked at Scathach and ignored the woman beside her.

Siena's eye twitched a little when she heard the disrespectful way Victor called Scathach. As the daughter of the strongest female vampire in the world, she had a lot of respect for her mother, and she didn't like someone 'inferior' calling her so informally.

And this feeling was shared by the three adoptive sisters.

Siena was about to say something, but her mother's following words left her speechless.

"Heh," She smiled seductively as she crossed her legs elegantly, "My son-in-law, were you so desperate to see me?"

## Chapter 36: It's time to get strong! And... Chaos.

At the same time in Victor's House:

"Here I got water," Sasha offered.

"T-Thanks" Anna was still very shaken, she drank all the water in one gulp. Then, when she saw Zack walking calmly through the house, she quickly got up from the couch and grabbed him!

"Meow!?"

She sits down on the couch again and starts stroking Zack.

"Meow~"

Ruby and Sasha's eyes sparkled for a moment when they saw Zack; they thought he looked too cute to pet.

Sasha approaches Ruby and sits beside her.

Anna looks at the two women and sighs, "Okay, let's start at the beginning."

"Y-Yes," Ruby was a little nervous.

"First, did you do 'that'?"

"That?" Ruby and Sasha didn't understand.

"I mean, what husband and wife do, did you guys do it?"

"Oh," Sasha exclaimed, and then she remembers the moment she sucked Victor's blood.

"Yes, we did," She smiled.

"Indeed," Ruby confirmed

"O-Oh, I-, I see," She stuttered a little and squeezed Zack a little harder without realizing it.

"M-Meow!?"

Realizing what she was doing to Zack, she quickly stopped squeezing Zack.

Anna takes a deep breath and asks:

"Y-You said you were married to my son, right?"

"Y-Yes," Both confirmed.

"V-Violet, does she know...?" For some reason, she didn't stop stuttering.

"Yes, she knows..." Ruby confirmed.

"Yes, she accepted our relationship," Sasha confirmed as well.

"..."

Anna looked at the two women with a blank expression.

Both women were sweating profusely now; they were a little afraid of being rejected by Anna.

Anna sighed again, she looked tired, like she lost some kind of battle, "How can I say...Congratulations on the wedding...? I guess..."

"Huh...?" Anna's words took time to register in Ruby and Sasha's brains.

"Thanks," Ruby smiled happily.

"Thanks, M-Mother," Sasha stuttered a little.

Seeing the two women's honest smiles, Anna looked like she'd suffered heart damage; I think my son will die soon... he was very lucky in a short time; something is not right.

Anna's own thoughts were confused...

"And to imagine that my son would have three wives..." After the initial shock, she slowly began to come back to her personality.

"In our country, this is normal," Ruby said.

"Oh? Which country do you live in...?"

Ruby was taken aback by the question... Legally, she is registered as Romanian, but the country she lives in is not registered on the world map.

Sasha looks at Ruby with a talkative look, and then she continues, "We live in a small community in Romania."

"Romania...? But Romania doesn't have polygamy."

Sasha was nervous, "We live in a small community, but that's not a problem; we can get married in Alabama!"

Ruby looked at Sasha like she was looking at an idiot.

"But Alabama is for incest..." Anna said.

"...Huh?" Sasha's face turned red.

Suddenly Anna's face darkened in horror, "Don't tell me my son went after your sister, or even worse, he went after your mother!? Does he plan to make Oyakodon!?"

"N-No!" Sasha was more confused than she was, and her eyes began to roll.

"She meant that in our community, polygamy is allowed!" Ruby helped Sasha.

"Oh..." Anna's face cleared a little, then she sighed, "I need to talk to my son..."

"That's what we came to talk about..." Ruby continued.

"Huh...?" Anna looked at Ruby.

Seeing Anna's look, Ruby started to get nervous again; she found it very difficult to talk about it with her husband's mother.

"H-Eh, H-Hmm..." Her eyes started to roll, "Sasha, Violet, and I want Victor to find our moms to ask her to marry him!"

"Huuh!?"

"Huh?"

Anna and Ruby herself didn't understand.

"As expected... It's an Oyakodon..." Anna puts her hand to her head as if she has a bad headache; Zack takes this chance and runs away from Anna's lap.

"N-NO! That's not it!"

Sasha takes a deep breath and says it all at a fast pace, "She meant that Victor traveled from Violet to Romania with the intention of asking our mothers for their blessings for our marriage!"

Sasha could embarrass most rap singers in the world with the speed she spoke those words.

"...He traveled to Romania to meet his mother-in-law..." Anna leans back on the couch, "My son is growing up fast, until a week ago he didn't even have a girlfriend..." She looked like she reached enlightenment.

Suddenly the women hear the door open, "Honey, I'm home," Leon, Victor's father, spoke as he walked towards the living room.

When he arrived in the room and saw two beautiful women, he suddenly stopped in shock and looked at his wife, confused. Then, seeing the state of his wife, he was even more confused; what's going on here?

"H-Hello, Father-in-law," The two said.

"Huh...?" He opened his mouth in shock.

...

Unaware of the little chaos his wives were causing with his parents, Victor was at this point meeting his mother-in-law.

"Heh," She smiled seductively as she crossed her legs elegantly, "My son-in-law, were you so desperate to see me?"

I swallow a little dryly when I look at my mother-in-law; she really knew how to tease me with just a simple gesture. When I was going to answer her question, I heard the woman next to her saying:

"S-Son-in-law?"

Looking at her, I see a woman with long red hair and eyes as red as Scathach.

"Who are you?" I asked.

Before the woman could say anything, I heard from Scathach, "She is my eldest adopted daughter."

"Oh, cool. Anyway," I lost interest. I look at my mother-in-law, who was wearing clothes that seemed to be glued to her curvy body:

"Why did you kidnap me?"

My mother-in-law's smile grew, she got up and walked towards me sensually; for a moment, I was mesmerized by those two mountains that looked unbearably soft. They were full, round, smooth, and perfectly shaped.

She gently touched my face and spoke with the same sensual tone as if she were seducing me:

"You said it was a shame you weren't strong enough to fight me, right?"

Slowly, my smile grew, and I nodded, "Yes."

"We should fix that, right?" Her smile changed to a predator's smile that showed all her sharp teeth.

"Oh, indeed," I smile just like her.

"Oh Fuck... She found another madman," I heard Siena speak, but I ignored her.

Scathach's smile changed to a satisfied smile, she took her hand away from my face and looked at a spot, then she yelled:

"Pepper!!"

Her voice seemed to resonate throughout the mansion.

"Yesh!!" I heard an awkward voice answering.

Suddenly, a girl with long red hair, a curvy body, and breasts that seem to rival Scathach appeared, she was just wearing a towel around her body.

"I've arrived, Mother!" She put a hand to her head like a soldier.

"Good." She looked at me, and for a moment, she seemed to study my reaction. But, seeing me not reacting much, she seemed pleased with something.

"She is my youngest adopted daughter, as you may have heard, her name is Pepper."

"Nice to meet you!" She flashed a goofy grin on her face

"Nice to meet you," I said in a neutral tone. For some reason, even though she was an attractive woman, I wasn't attracted to her... I felt that 'something' was missing in her...

"Your initial training is simple; you must identify and learn to use your powers-"

Before she can finish, I open my hand, suddenly, a fireball appears.

"Oh...?" She displayed a curious smile.

"Huh?" Siena exclaimed in surprise.

"Fue?" Pepper looked, surprised?

The fire disappeared, and soon lightning began to crackle in my hand, then the lightning disappeared, and soon a block of ice appeared in my hand.

"Even my mother's powers..." Siena said, looking at me.

"Ruby married someone interesting," I heard someone's voice; I looked to Siena's side and saw Lacus smiling with a curious look.

I point my hand in a direction that had no one and say, "All blood belongs to me."

But nothing happens...

"What are you trying to do?" I heard Scathach asking, her voice sounding heavier than usual.

"Give me a sec."

What did I do? Remember the memory I got from Ruby...

I close my eyes and try again, but I can't... Tsk, I can't get the right feeling to use that power...

Suddenly, I heard a voice in my ear that shivered through my whole body:

"Victor, don't be in a hurry."

I look to the side and see Scathach's distorted smile, her eyes were glowing red, and she was staring at me with a possessive face.

"You have all the time in the world to get better." She spoke with a seductive smile.

"...You're right," Seeing that smile made my body shiver; I needed to fight her!

"Train the basics with Pepper, she may be an air-head, but she's strong."

"I will," I nod and pull my attention away from my mother-in-law and look at Pepper; I walk over to the woman and pick her up like a sack of potatoes.

"Kyaa!?" She yelled in a thin voice, "What are you doing!?"

"You have to train me, right? I'm kidnapping you."

"Great... He has the same attitude as my mom..." Siena said, but as usual, I ignored her.

"Huh...?" Before she can say anything, I put strength in my legs and run to an open spot that I saw with my eyes.

When Victor left, Siena asked her mother:

"Is that all right...?"

"Hmm?" Scathach looked at her daughter

When Siena saw Scathach's smile, she felt her entire body tremble in fear.

"Oh~, about Pepper? It's all right. Victor is a good man; he won't do anything against Pepper."

"..." Siena and Lacus opened their mouths looking like a fish who didn't know what to say; they were just too shocked. They had never seen their mother praise a man in their life before.

"You look happy, Mom..." Lacus commented.

"Happy...?" Scathach spoke, confused, then she put her hand to her face.

"...Maybe...Maybe I am." Her smile changed to a seductive smile. "I have something to do; I'll see you guys later."

Scathach soon disappears.

"...I think she's glad she found a man with potential...? After all, she likes to fight," Lacus questioned.

"Is that what you think?" Siena asked as she looked at her sister.

"Yes," Lacus replied, she looked at her sister, "What do you think?"

"I don't know, but she wouldn't react so strongly if that man just had a big 'potential'."

The two sisters had many doubts in their heads, but one thing they were sure of; they were curious about the man who had piqued their mother's interest.

## Chapter 37: like mother, like daughter.

Violet's perspective, a few minutes before Victor woke up.

Going through the portal, Violet realized she was at her house.

Just as she was about to leave her house and look for Victor, she heard a cold voice:

"Lady Violet, you finally came home."

She looks at the voice and sees a maid with short white hair and blue eyes, she was the personal maid and head maid of the Snow Clan.

"Oh, it's you, Hilda... Anyway, I'm leaving!" Violet starts running towards Scathach's mansion, she passes by Hilda's side.

"Wait," Hilda grabbed Violet by her shirt collar.

"Ugh!" Violet was almost hanged, then she turns to face Hilda. "Are you going to get in my way too...?"

Seeing Violet's lifeless eyes, Hilda said coldly, "Of course not."

"But as a maid, I have a duty to do." She started walking as she dragged Violet by her shirt collar:

"And my order was that when you came home, I should take you to meet your mother."

"Let go of me! I don't want to see that old woman! I'm going back to my Darling!" Violet tried to free herself from Hilda's grip, but it was a futile attempt.

Hilda has stopped walking, she looks at Violet, her blue eyes change to blood-red, "...You did the ritual..."

Violet puts on a smug expression, "Of course I did!" But soon, her expression crumbles, "Although there were some unforeseen events."

"Oh? This is something your mother should know." Hilda started walking again, she pulled Violet and held her like a sack of potatoes.

"Ugh...!" Violet began to struggle, "Let go of me!"

Hilda ignored Violet and continued walking, "In all the millennium I've served the Snow family, I've never seen anyone as reckless as you..." Hilda puts a hand to her face as if she's thinking about something and keeps talking in the same cold tone, "Coming to think about it, you have the same personality as your mother when she was younger; although you are less aggressive than her..."

"Annoying..." Violet muttered angrily; Violet's body began to become covered in fire.

"Oh?" Hilda looks at the fire in Violet's body: "Your powers have grown stronger... That's good news."

Hilda smacks Violet on the ass.

Slap!

"Ugh..."

"Don't be a rude child; you know the rules, right?" She spoke in a cold tone as her eyes glowed red.

"Can't use powers indoors, right?" Violet snorted and continued, "I haven't forgotten! Now, let go of me! The only one who can hit my ass is my Darling!"

Hilda sighed, "I think it's because you're only 21 years old, and because of that, you're really spoiled?" Soon she started walking.

Violet got angry again, "I'm already an adult by human standards!"

"But to us, you're still a newborn baby..." She looked around and even looked into her shadows, "Where's Kaguya and Natalia? Shouldn't they be protecting you?"

Giving up on running away, for now, Violet sighed and said, "Kaguya is protecting my Darling, and Natalia stayed behind with Ruby and Sasha."

"The Fulger heiress, and the Scarlett heiress..." She puts her hand to her chin and continues, "I heard they were in that town too."

"What happened to your 'Darling'?" She asked in a neutral tone.

"He was kidnapped by Ruby's mother." Violet started to get angry again.

"Oh, looks like Countess Scathach took an interest in your Darling."

"Of course, she would be interested in him! He has great potential!" She squealed proudly.

"Oh...?" Hilda displayed a small smile.

...

Hilda enters a room, and then she puts Violet on the floor:

"Lady Agnes, Lord Adonis. I brought Lady Violet."

"Hmm...? Oh, good job, Hilda."

Violet looks at her mother, who was sitting on a sofa. She was a curvaceous woman with big H-cup breasts and skinny legs, she had pale vampire skin and golden eyes, a very unusual eye color even for vampires.

She had long white hair that reached to her waist and wore simple glasses, she was wearing black leather pants and a long black

shirt.

"Are you still wearing those glasses, Mom? It's not like you have a vision problem," Violet commented.

"But I look good in glasses, right?" Violet's mother, Agnes, spoke with a narcissistic smile.

"Whatever," Violet snorted.

"Heh, you're still in the same bad mood... I thought meeting your 'darling' would calm you down a bit." She sneered at the word 'darling'.

Violet, hearing the obvious tone of contempt, didn't like it one bit.

Violet looks at her mom, and slowly her eyes begin to darken, "...What did you say, bitch...?"

Agnes's face distorted when she heard her daughter call her, "Are you that attached to those cattle?"

Violet's eyes changed to blood red, and she looked at her own mother like she was about to jump her neck at any moment.

"Daughter, don't fight with your mother in my room, okay?" She suddenly heard a gentle voice, gentle as if blessed by heaven itself.

"Agnes, don't tease our daughter; she's different from you," He spoke a little coldly as his eyes glowed a little violet.

"H-Humpf," Agnes turned her face away.

Violet ignores her mother, then looks at the bed and sees a pale, frail-looking man with short white hair and violet eyes.

Despite looking like a frail man, he still displayed a supernatural 'beauty' that was far superior to any woman and man Violet had encountered. Violet thought; 'my dad is handsome, but my Darling is prettier!... But I'm a little jealous; I wish I had inherited just a little of

that supernatural beauty...'

Violet looks at her mother's breast and thinks; 'I should have inherited those breasts too! Why are genes unfair!?'

Violet was still a woman, she still had few insecurities, especially now that Ruby had become Victor's wife.

Adonis had a gentle expression on his face as he looked at his daughter, "Come here, daughter," He called her.

Violet nodded and walked towards the bed; when she got closer to her father and saw how weak he was, she said, "... Are you okay...?"

Although she didn't show it when Scathach asked in the past, she was still worried about her father, she was closer to him than her very narcissistic mother.

He smiled gently, "Yes, I'm fine, I just need to drink blood, and I'll be brand new."

"Liar..." She whispered, "You always say that, but you never get better."

"Hahaha," He laughed in a weak voice, he slapped the bed with a gesture for her to go up, "Come here, tell me about your 'darling'"

Violet bites her lip, she wanted to talk to her father, but she wanted to find Victor first!

Seeing his daughter's expression, he asked, "Hmm? Are you worried about something?"

"I need to see my Darling! He is in danger!"

"Oh? Tell me what happened"

"Mm" Violet started to explain what happened to Victor, and

without realizing it, she started talking more about Victor to her father.

She climbed into bed and sat up, and soon she looked like a child who came home and told her father everything about her day.

A few minutes later, Adonis laughed with a gentle smile, "He seems to be an interesting man; I would like to meet him in the future."

"I will bring him in the future so you can meet him!" Violet asked excitedly.

Seeing how excited his daughter was, he laughed a gentle laugh and asked, "Just out of curiosity, you didn't kidnap him, right?"

Violet thought for a moment and replied:

"... Of course not."

"Good, good! As expected, you are very different from your mother!" He sighed, relieved for himself and for Victor.

"Hey! Why are you so happy!?" Agnes, who was silent, asked with a pout.

Adonis looked at Agnes and spoke in a dry tone, "Well, the experience of being kidnapped, and raped for a whole month, can hardly be forgotten no matter how long I live."

"Ugh," She seems to have taken damage, but then she spoke angrily, "Just forget about it! That happened 1800 years ago! I'm not the same woman I was before!"

He flashed a gentle smile, "Indeed, you're no longer a crazy, psychopathic hedonist who did what you wanted."

The woman's face just distorts several times, listening to what her husband was saying.

He continued with the same gentle smile, "Now you're just a

narcissistic woman, and because of that personality, our daughter doesn't like to talk to you."

Agnes looks at Violet, "...That's not true, right...? You like me, right?"

Violet just turned her face away and ignored her mother.

Agnes looked like she could cry at any moment, but Violet and Adonis didn't care.

Adonis sighed and looked at Violet, and speaks with a fatherly smile:

"Even though your mother is the way she is, I've learned to love her over the years." He said that but, inside, he was thinking; 'I was beaten by Stockholm syndrome and those breasts... Well, She's better than that bitch Aphrodite and Persephone... Sigh, my life is a disaster; it's a sin to be born beautiful...'

Adonis was a bit narcissistic too...

"Darling..." Agnes looked at Adonis with possessive eyes.

Seeing Agnes's gaze, he smiled a helpless smile; he promised never to tell anyone he liked the look his wife gave him.

Feeling a sudden pain in his chest, Adonis displays the best smile he can muster and says, "It's time, huh? I think you should find your 'Darling'."

Violet's eyes flashed with possessiveness, and then she yelled, "DARLING!"

Soon she ran towards the exit of the mansion.

"Pfft..." He held back his laugh, but then he laughed gently, "Hahaha... I think she's a bit like You, Agnes..."

"Humpf," Agnes snorted, but Adonis could see she had a gentle smile on her face:

"I still don't agree with my daughter relating to cattle," She said grumpily.

Adonis exhibited a gentle smile and said, "Oh...? So I am cattle too? I see..."

Agnes' body shook, and she quickly said, "N-No! You are different from those humans!"

"Oh...? How am I different?" he asked curiously.

Agnes' face glowed in possession, "You're mine, Darling~,"

"..."

Adonis just displayed an ironic smile.

## Chapter 38: Pepper is an airhead girl.

A few minutes later, in the personal garden of Scathach's mansion, despite calling it a garden, this place looked more like a forest than a garden...

"Cough" The girl in front of me pretended to cough, she massaged her throat a little, she was trying to thicken her voice:

"A-A-B... Testing, one, two..."

She looks at me with a serious face and speaks, "My name is Pepper, as per my mother's orders, I'm responsible-"

I interrupted her, "Aren't you going to change your clothes?"

"Fue?" She looked confused for a moment, she looked down and saw that she was still wearing a towel, "Oh..."

Suddenly I hear a small explosion, and I see her face turning bright red, then she disappears with surprising speed.

At the same time that happens, my shadow expands, and soon Kaguya comes out of my shadow:

"Lord Victor."

"Oh, Kaguya, what happened?" I asked as I stroked her head.

"Mm," She doesn't say anything and just stays silent.

Feeling her black hair in my hand, I smile contentedly and say, "While we wait for Pepper, do you have any training tips?"

"Hmm... believe in yourself?" She said.

My smile threatened to break, "Is that supposed to help me in any

way?"

"Noble vampires instinctively know how to use their powers when they are born; the only problem we have is 'controlling' the output of our power. After all, depending on the noble vampire's bloodline, their power can reach absurd levels."

"I see... So you are born geniuses," I continued stroking her head.

"You are wrong." Kaguya spoke, she thought for a moment and continued: "It's like a baby who instinctively knows how to cry or ask their mother for food... With our species, it's the same. We instinctively know how to use our power, the only problem we have is to control, and improving that power to new levels."

"I see," I understood what she said; it's like moving your arm. You know instinctively how to move your body, right? It's basically something like that.

Suddenly, I see a red silhouette, and soon I see that Pepper has returned wearing new clothes; she's wearing a red uniform and black tights.

She looks at me with her face a little embarrassed, "... Let's continue."

She intends to ignore everything that happened, huh?

"Okay," I said as I stopped stroking Kaguya's hair.

"Cough," She coughed again and explained in a cute voice, "Let's skip the basics; after all, you already know what your unique powers are. So what we're going to do today is learn to control the basic powers of a vampire."

"What do you mean?" I asked, confused.

"It's something like this" She looks like she's going to demonstrate something, she looks at a tree in the distance and says, "Pay

attention, I'll just run 'normal'"

Pepper suddenly positions herself, her body starts to be covered by a fog, and she disappears and then reappears in front of the tree, and soon she returns to the same position again.

"See? This is a basic skill for all vampires. As creatures of the night, we can blend into the night easily; what I've demonstrated now is 'fog walking'."

"That was cool... Can all vampires do this?" Despite speaking in a neutral voice, my eyes were gleaming with curiosity.

"Yes, it's a basic skill." This time, Kaguya answered me, "The basic vampire skills are fog walking, bat transformation, night vision, and claws," She said.

She points her hand at me, and I see her hand has changed, her nails have gotten sharper and more deadly, and her hand has seemed to grow stronger.

Pepper looks at Kaguya with a pout on her face; Kaguya just looks at Pepper with a stoic look.

Pepper puffed out her chest in annoyance.

Boing! Boing!

And they swayed like crazy...

For a moment, I see Kaguya's black eyes turning blood red, she looks annoyed at something.

Soon Pepper goes on to explain, "Noble vampires usually ignore these basic abilities and focus only on the powers they inherited from their parents, for example."

She pointed to Kaguya, "This maid, she has the power to control the shadows, and using those powers, she modified the basic vampire

abilities to fit her power."

I remember Kaguya's fight with Mizuki, and I nod in agreement, she seemed to 'walk' in the shadows in that fight.

"Oh, do you know Kaguya?" I asked, curious.

"Yes, she was always around when Violet came to visit Ruby."

"Why doesn't Lacus know Kaguya?"

"Lacus... She's really lazy, she just stays asleep and only wakes up when something interesting happens..." She looked uncomfortable for some reason. "Because of that, she doesn't know the people who visit our house."

"Oh..." I didn't know what to say; this seemed to be a family issue, something like having a child who is a 'NEET'.

"..."

She looks at me with neutral eyes, then continues, "Why don't you try to get used to the basic powers first? Try to use your basic vampire powers, and when you get used to them, we'll train the powers you were born with."

"Why should we train these powers if they aren't used a lot?" I asked with genuine doubt. After all, I haven't seen my wives using these powers.

"My mother always said that the basics are the most important; you need a strong foundation to build the pillars for your strength in the future..."

"Hmm... I'll try," That sounds interesting too. I feel like those men in the comics who are discovering their powers.

I position myself to run, and before I can do anything:

I heard Kaguya warning me, "Remember Lord Victor, don't use your unique powers, just use your racial powers!"

"I know, I just have to turn into mist, right?"

"Yes," She confirmed.

Let's try... Pepper said I must know how to use this ability instinctively; I close my eyes and think of the image of Pepper running, focusing on what I should do. Then, I open my eyes, and I try to imitate what Pepper did.

I put some strength in my legs and run towards the tree...

...

Lacus and Siena, who were drinking tea, suddenly hear an explosion as if a lightning bolt has fallen to the ground.

BOOOOOOOOOOOOOM!

"... What is it!? It is not raining!" Lacus was startled by the sudden noise.

Siena just looks at her sister with a neutral expression, she drinks the 'tea' which contains a red drink, and explains, "The noise came from the garden, I think it's our mother's guest-"

Siena stopped talking when she saw Lacus had left, she sighs, "She's too rushed."

...

Pepper and Kaguya heard an explosion as if lightning had fallen to the ground, and soon after, they saw the tree destroyed and in pieces; then, fire started to come out of Victor's body, and soon he slammed his body into a rock...

"... Well, I knew it would happen, but... The destruction is bigger

than I expected," Kaguya commented.

"Wawawa, the forest is on fire!" Pepper was freaking out.

Kaguya hits Pepper on the head.

"Ouch!" She puts her hand to her head and looks at Kaguya with a face that could cry at any moment. "W-What? Why did you hit me?"

"Calm down, and use your powers," Kaguya spoke.

Suddenly, Pepper's expression lit up, "Oh."

Pepper steps on the ground, the ground broke with the force she put in, and soon a massive amount of water started coming out of the cracks.

She points her finger at the forest and yells, "Ey!"

The water she was controlling rises to the skies and began to fall into the forest as if the place were raining.

As a surprising display of control, Pepper just doused the spreading fire.

"Good job," Kaguya said.

"Hehehehe," She laughed as she scratched her head.

Kaguya uses her speed and runs towards Victor; seeing that Kaguya is gone, Pepper follows her example and uses her speed.

...

"Lord Victor... Didn't I tell you not to use your powers?" Kaguya asked.

"I didn't try to use my powers..." Victor muttered as he got up from a crater that was more than 1 KM wide; he didn't seem to be hurt.

Then, realizing he was wet with water, fire started to come out of his body, and soon he was dry again.

He looks at his clothes and thinks; these clothes are amazing, they are quite resistant...

Kaguya looks at the ground around Victor and sees that the soil was filled with small pieces of ice.

'Hmm... Maybe?' She seemed to be thinking of something.

"I tried to run like Pepper, but for some reason, it happened." He pointed at the crater.

"Fue...?" Pepper looked surprised, she looked around and said, "You tried to run like me and created this giant crater...?" She asked with an expression of shock.

"Pepper, what was that noise." Lacus suddenly arrives, and she looks around, "Wow, this is big."

"...Lord Victor, can you do something for me?"

"Yes? What is it?" Victor replied in a neutral tone.

"Follow me," Kaguya said and started to run.

Victor started following Kaguya, and soon Pepper and Lacus, who were curious about what was going to happen, began to follow as well.

Kaguya stops in front of an ordinary tree.

"See that tree? I want you to pull the tree out of the ground and throw the tree in a random direction."

"...?" Victor didn't understand the purpose of this, but he did as Kaguya asked.

Victor approaches the tree trunk and puts his hand gently on it; somehow, he can instinctively sense that using one hand was enough. So he pulls the tree out of the ground and lifts it with ease.

He looks at an empty spot and throws the tree.

Everyone watched the tree that was suddenly frozen in the air; when that tree fell to the ground and broke the ice around it, a fire started to be created, and soon lightning fell from the sky...

"...!?"

"...As expected..." Kaguya seems to have figured something out.

"... T-This is bullshit!!" Lacus suddenly yelled in frustration, she looked like she was freaking out.

"Fue!?" Pepper was startled by the sudden scream.

Victor puts his hand to his ear, "Why are you screaming, woman?"

Lacus looks at Victor, "Don't you understand what you just did...?"

"...?" Victor looked at Lacus confused:

"I threw the tree, and suddenly it turned to ice; when the ice fell to the ground, the ground started to catch fire, and suddenly lightning fell from the sky even though there were no clouds in the sky." He explained what he saw aloud.

"..." Lacus just looked at Victor with an expression that said she didn't believe what she was seeing in front of her.

## Chapter 39: Anomaly.

Lacus looked at Victor with an expression that didn't believe what she was hearing.

"And even saying that you still don't understand what you did?"

"Woman, stop walking around and say what you're thinking!"

"Ugh," Lacus puts her hand to her head like she has a headache.

"Lady Lacus is frustrated because you did something impossible," My favorite maid enlightened me with knowledge; I look at Kaguya:

"You used an attack to seamlessly unite the three powers..." She looks at the minor damage my attack has done:

"This attack is basically the fusion of the powers of Clan Fulger, Clan Scarlett, and Clan Snow."

"...And?"

"..." The three women look at Victor in silence.

Pepper sighs cutely, "He needs to learn about vampire society first."

Kaguya nodded in agreement.

"Listen, Victor. Let's do an example here, okay?" Lacus starts to explain as if she were explaining to a child, she picks up a stick from the ground and starts drawing a picture on the ground:

"Let's use my sister Ruby as an example" She drew Ruby on the floor: "Ruby is a vampire who inherited the powers of Scathach, the strongest female vampire in the world."

"In the beginning, my mother's powers weren't as strong as they are now, she could only create a block of ice." She drew Scathach using her powers: "She had to train hard to raise her powers to the level it is now, and over the millennia, she managed to increase that power..."

"And then, at some point in my mom's life, she decided she wanted to have a daughter; at first, she was just bored, and she decided that on a whim. And, like every strong female vampire at the time, she did the obvious... She kidnapped a vampire from a Clan that had powers that could match her powers."

"..." Victor was speechless.

"The man who was the chosen one was a vampire who could control water and breathe underwater."

"Mom used the vampire until she became pregnant, and even went through the ritual and married the vampire, she did all of this to ensure that her child had greater potential than she did..."

"A few years later, when Ruby was born, she killed her husband and raised Ruby on her own..."

"And Ruby inherited the powers of both parents perfectly," She drew Ruby using her powers, "Ruby could control water and ice, and she could also breathe underwater; she could also combine the two powers like you did now."

"Because of this peculiarity of our race, vampires are feared... After all, with each passing generation, vampires have the potential to surpass their parents, but unfortunately, that potential is wasted..." She sighed and continued :

"Since she was little, Ruby has always had great power because of what happened in the past; she has the potential to surpass Scathach, but she needs to train a lot."

She looks at Victor and says, "What you've done now is literally impossible! You have the three powers of the strongest Clans in the vampire world, and you've combined the powers perfectly..."

She looked at me, "Do you understand!?"

"Yes... My mother-in-law is crazy... And you draw really bad... And my wife has better potential than my mother-in-law, and can surpass her in the future... And you draw really bad..." Victor nodded with his head, indicating that he understood.

"That's not it! I mean... That's it, but it's not that! AHHHH!" Lacus yelled in frustration as she held her head, she looked at Victor:

"And no need to say that I draw bad twice!"

"Hmm..." Victor displayed a small smile when he saw Lacus' reaction.

"In the world of vampires..." Kaguya started to explain, and I look at her. Then, realizing I was paying attention to her, she continued:

"All Clans that hold the title of noble vampire these days have done something like that in the past. With each generation that passed, they'd make their children train to the limit, and then they'd find a partner who matched the clan's powers, and made their heirs have children."

"Two thousand years of selective breeding, just to create a vampire with stronger potential than the parents, although that kind of practice is quite limited because vampires have low fertility..."

Then she continues, "And suddenly 'BOOOOM!'" She made an exaggerated gesture with the same stoic expression on her face:

"You showed up and used the three powers of the Clan of Vampire Counts, and you're neither a son nor an heir of those Clans... You basically ignored the whole history of the Clan of Vampires when

existing. Because of that, she said that what you did it's impossible."

"...Lord Victor is an anomaly; his potential far surpasses most vampires out there."

Victor opened his mouth in shock, and then he looked at his fists as he thought; 'so having these powers is considered abnormal...'

Victor was feeling weird, he didn't consider himself special or anything like that, but it wasn't a bad feeling; 'With this 'potential', if I train like crazy, maybe in less than a few years, can I get to my mother-in-law's level...? I really want to fight her...'

"I get it, thank you, Kaguya..." I smiled gently and patted her head.

Kaguya exhibited a small smile on her face.

"Selective breeding, huh?" I put my hand on my chin, "So my wives' families did that too..."

"...Huh?" Pepper suddenly exclaimed in surprise.

"Why did you understand her confusing explanation and not mine!?" Lacus yelled.

Victor ignored Lacus...

Kaguya suddenly said, "Your wives' Clan doesn't need to do this."

"Let's use Ruby as an example again."

"Countess Scathach was already a powerful woman when she decided to have a daughter, and when she had a daughter, the daughter was born with the 'potential' to surpass her own mother, in the end... It all depends on the parents themselves and the children's effort; after all, the children have a better start than the parents had."

"I see... I don't understand something."

"If vampires have this quirk as a race, why aren't they stronger than other factions?"

"Well... There are noble vampires with the same personality as Corneliu..." Kaguya explained.

'Who?' Victor thought, confused.

"80% of vampires worldwide are like that man, lazy, proud, and never train..."

"..." I just looked at Kaguya with a blank expression.

"But don't despair! 19% of vampires are workers! And only 1% are crazy about training like Lady Scathach!"

'...Vampires are fucked...80% of the vampire population is just useless.' Victor thought.

"...Just out of curiosity, my wife Violet's mother, and my wife Sasha's mother, are they just like Scathach?" Victor's eyes gleamed for a moment.

"...They're not the same... Lady Violet's mother is... Narcissistic and obsessed with her husband." She tried to find better words, but in the end, she just gave up:

"Lady Sasha's mother... She is obsessed with gambling, and rarely trains, but with the two women living over 1900 years, they are powerful... But they are not on the same level as Ruby's mother..."

"Oh..." Victor looked disappointed for a moment.

"...Why this sudden curiosity with the two women-" Lacus was about to ask something, but suddenly Pepper yelled in a cute voice.

"Are you ignoring what he just said!?"

"Huh?" Lacus looked at her sister.

"Didn't you hear!? He just said 'my wives!'" She mimicked Victor's voice perfectly at the end.

"Oh-..." Lacus looked at Victor,

"Do you have any more wives?" She asked curiously.

"Yes," I replied with a gentle smile.

"Who are they?" Lacus asked with the same curiosity.

Victor was going to answer the question, but...

"Didn't you hear!?" Pepper yelled again, "He was talking about Violet and Sasha! Kyaaaaa! I need to tell my friends! The three flowers of the vampire world have been taken by a stranger!"

"..." Lacus looked at her sister and said, "Why are you just smart for these things?"

"Lady Pepper likes to gossip..." Kaguya sighed.

"She's just bored..." Lacus sighed too.

"Why don't we train? We've already talked too much," Victor suggested and started walking toward a more spacious place.

"Lord Victor is right," Kaguya started to follow Victor.

The two sisters look at each other and nod; then, they follow Victor too.

Some minutes later.

As Victor walked through the forest, he suddenly felt his throat go dry.

"Ugh," He dropped to his knees on the ground, his eyes changed to blood red, and his teeth started to change and get sharper.

All the symptoms that were quite common, Kaguya said, "... Bloodlust,"

"...This is a good time!" Pepper yelled like she had a good idea, "We should train bloodlust control."

"I disagree; Lord Victor's bloodlust is stronger than that of ordinary vampires. Therefore, the chance of him going mad is very high," Kaguya strongly disapproved.

"Why is his bloodlust stronger?" Pepper asked in curiosity.

"Something happened in the past that made him like this," Kaguya spoke ambiguously.

"..." Pepper looked at Kaguya with a cute look.

"So, what are we supposed to do?" Lacus asked.

"...You don't need to do anything...I'm fine." Victor stood up and forced a 'gentle' smile on his face, but it failed miserably because his sharp teeth were showing.

Kaguya looked at Victor with a stoic expression, "Lord Victor, are you sure everything is alright? Hasn't your bloodlust gotten stronger compared to before?"

"Yes... it got stronger..." Victor kept walking, then he explained:

"Even if I wanted to quench my thirst... My wives aren't around now, and it's impossible for me to quench my thirst with common blood."

"... That's true."

"Because of that nuisance, I don't want to get married! Just imagine being dependent on someone else's blood for eternity? No thanks." Lacus snorted.

Victor ignored Lacus and continued walking, Kaguya looked at Lacus with a neutral expression, but she didn't say anything.

"I found a place with space to train," Victor said while looking at a distant place with his vision, and soon he used his speed and ran towards that place, Kaguya who was close to Victor, just ran along with him.

Pepper looked at her sister with a cute look but just shrugged and followed Victor.

"...huh? W-Wait! Don't leave me behind!"

## Chapter 40: Violet arrived, and two wives meet their father-in-law.

Victor's house.

"So..." Leon puts his hand on his head as if he has a bad headache:

"Are you telling me my son has two more wives, and you are them?"

"Y-Yes"

"...Yes"

Sasha stuttered a little when she spoke, she was very embarrassed. Ruby managed to respond in a more neutral tone and keep her face cool.

"..." Even though Leon had heard the confirmation from the two women, he still couldn't believe what he was hearing.

"...And do you agree with that? I mean, aren't you guys jealous or something?" he asked again.

"..." Ruby and Sasha look at each other, then the two women look at Leon.

"I feel jealous, but since Ruby and Violet are my childhood friends, I don't really care that much? I feel like a lot hasn't changed, and that Victor has just joined the group?" Sasha spoke with a confused expression on her face.

It was her honest feelings, and even though she didn't understand that feeling completely, being with Victor soothed her a lot, she felt very comfortable; it was the same feeling as when she was with

Julia...

"Indeed... I feel the same. I'm sure if we weren't childhood friends, this situation would be much more problematic." Ruby spoke as she thought; 'if they were other women, I would never have let them get close to my Darling.'

"..." Leon just looked at the two women with a shocked expression.

"So jealous...-" Leon suddenly felt a shiver in his body; he looked at his wife, and seeing the glow in her eyes, he pretended to cough, "Cough! I mean, I feel jealous of how you three get together well with my son; I hope you can take care of him!"

"Oh! Thank you." Ruby spoke.

"Thanks?" Sasha thanked him, a little confused.

"...Leon?"

"Y-Yes, honey?" He spoke with a strained smile on his face.

"How was your work?" Anna asked with a small smile on her face.

"Huh...? Oh! The work was good, I had little problems, but it's the usual."

"Anyway, I'm glad my son has two more lovely wives like you to look after him." He smiled at Ruby and Sasha.

Sasha and Ruby's faces lit up, and they smiled happily.

"Thanks, Father," Sasha said.

"Thanks..." Ruby said.

Leon couldn't help but be enchanted by the two women's smiles, but when he felt his wife's gaze intensify as if she were stabbing him in

every inch of his body, he made the wisest decision he could make in this kind of situation. :

"I have something to solve, you know, work calls!" He got up from the couch and calmly walked up the stairs, "I'll see you guys another day."

He ran-away...

"Nice job, Father. Don't work too hard, or you might get sick." Sasha was kind.

Leon stopped walking, and replied looking at Sasha, "I'm not going to, and thanks for your concern, Sasha."

Leon went upstairs, and the moment he didn't feel his wife's gaze anymore, he crouched down on the stairs and put his ear to the wall, then he thought; 'when did my son become a chad? I know he inherited my bricklayer genes, but even I can't do something like that! A woman is already a big problem, imagine having two more!? Hell no!'

After the initial problems and Anna's shock to learn that her son has two more wives, she accepted this situation more easily when she found that the two personalities of the women were quite agreeable.

Ruby was very quiet and had a cold expression on her face all the time, but she could see that there was a very kind woman behind that cold face.

Sasha was more talkative than Ruby, but she was more easily embarrassed by heartfelt compliments, and, when she called Sasha her daughter, Anna thinks she's found a new hobby of teasing Sasha. However, she will try very hard not to go overboard.

That was Anna's initial impression of Sasha and Ruby.

What about Leon's opinion on this subject...? It doesn't matter,

and Anna planned to talk to him later...

Leon felt his body shiver again...

Anna was a little upset with Leon, but she wasn't angry with him or anything... She was just a little frustrated with her son's sudden change, and she knew exactly how to resolve that frustration, she was thinking it would be an excellent time to give Victor a brother or sister.

Leon was a very simple man; he lives life simply, and if he likes something, he accepts it; if he doesn't like something, he shows his middle finger and says, "Fuck you."

Leon is not very good with words like his wife; he prefers to work things out with his fist. But, he's sensitive enough to see when his son is in trouble, and help him whenever possible; he'd rather act than talk, an honest man.

And, from past experience, Leon could see from the moment he looked at Ruby and Sasha that the two were very nice women and had good personalities; they weren't women who would cause trouble for his son. Besides that, he didn't care too much.

His thinking was simple; My son is an adult, and I trust him. But if I see he is going down a wrong path, I will advise him.

And that same thought was shared by Anna, Victor's mother.

...

Basement of Victor's house.

"...Somehow it worked out," Sasha sat on the couch, she was mentally drained:

"I never want to do this again... I never thought it would be so tiring..." She seemed to be melting on the couch.

Ruby sat on the couch and crossed her legs elegantly, "Y-Yes,

everything went according to plan," She stuttered a little.

Sasha looked at Ruby out of the corner of her eye, she didn't even feel like pointing it out to Ruby right now.

Natalia suddenly appears and brings a cup of tea that contains a red liquid inside.

"Thanks, but I don't want-..." Ruby was going to refuse the tea, she didn't want to drink someone else's blood, but she stopped talking when she smelled the blood.

"...This is my Darling's blood." She swallowed hard.

Sasha opens her eyes and looks into her cup of tea, her face suddenly twisting in disgust.

"When did you get this?" Ruby asked curiously.

"When Lord Victor was sleeping, I collected some of his blood," Natalia smiled gently.

Ruby looked at Natalia with a cold face; 'That's impossible. No one enters my Darling's room without me or Sasha and Violet noticing... Oh, she used her powers.'

"Is it okay to use your powers for something so...insignificant?" She asked, a little unsure...

"I have power; why shouldn't I use it any way I want?" Natalia replied.

"..." Ruby agreed with Natalia's reasoning.

"Are you going to take this? I wouldn't recommend it," Sasha suddenly spoke up.

"Why...?" Ruby asked, confused.

Sasha explains, "Although it's my husband's blood, for some reason the blood tastes really bad, it felt like I was eating spoiled food, it's better to drink straight from the source."

"Oh...? You have tried?" Ruby asked and complained a little, "Don't treat our husband like he's a blood factory."

"...I'm kidding, you need to relax more, Ruby," Sasha said.

"Humpf," Ruby snorted, and for a few seconds, the two mounds swayed in a way that could mesmerize any straight man.

Sasha rolled her eyes again, "Answering your question... Yes, I took the blood, and to this day, I regret drinking that blood." She had never felt so much like vomiting in her life.

Natalia looks at Ruby with a gentle smile on her face, "Will Lady Ruby want tea?"

"...." Ruby looks at Natalia with a blank expression.

"No... I don't want to," She refused; although the smell was appealing, she decided to trust Sasha.

"...Oh, that's too bad," Natalia commented as she removed her tea and walked towards the kitchen. For a moment, she looked at Maria and thought; 'this maid... She's just not doing anything, right? And she doesn't even say anything either... Should I put her to work?'

"Let's go back home?" Ruby asked Sasha.

"Yes, let's go back," Sasha agreed and got up from the couch, but soon Sasha, Maria, Ruby, and Natalia looked to the middle of the room.

A magic circle suddenly appears in the middle of the room:

"Hey! Hey! Hey! I came back with shocking information!" The witch June appeared with a smile on her face.

...

Current location: North in the territory of Countess Scathach Scarlett.

Front of the Scathach mansion,

"Finally, I arrived!" Violet squealed in frustration as she looked at the mansion entrance that was a grand old-looking gate. "Because of Natalia, I had to run from the South to the North! Damn, why didn't Natalia open the portal to Ruby's house!?" She was angry again, but then she sighs:

"As usual, this place is quite desolate." She looks around and sees only forests and snow-covered mountains, "I never understood why that old hag chose her personal home in such a secluded place."

"Tsk, Tsk," Violet heard a woman's voice, "You never learn, brat."

Violet looks up and sees Scathach standing horizontally against her gate wall.

"Where's Victor!?" Violet asked impatiently.

Scathach drops to the ground and responds, "He's training with Pepper."

"What!?" Violet screamed in horror, she remembers Pepper's appearance; 'That bitch is going to seduce my Darling! I will kill her!'

Violet's eyes started to change to red, and her teeth began to get sharp.

Seeing Violet's face, Scathach approaches Violet and hits her on the head.

"Ouch!" Violet puts her hand on her head and glares at Scathach angrily, "What was that-"

"Stop your paranoia, brat. Don't you trust your husband?"

"Of course I trust him! I don't trust your daughter!" Violet yelled, she points a finger at Scathach and continues, "Your daughters were raised by you! They can at any time kidnap my husband and do this and that to him!"

"...Makes sense." Scathach has always raised her daughters to be strong and independent women; of course, her upbringing is quite questionable these days...

Scathach turned around and entered her house, "He's in the forest."

Violet's eyes flashed red, and then she was gone.

## Chapter 41: The greedy witch.

"If you came back, then you must have found something, correct?" Natalia asked the witch June.

"Yes~," June laughed, she looked very pleased.

"Did you hire her?" Ruby asked Natalia.

Natalia nodded in agreement.

"Oh, I vaguely remember she said that... But I was really busy at the time," Sasha said.

June rolled her eyes when she heard Sasha's words, she thought; 'of course, you were busy; you were sucking your husband's blood.'

"Lady Ruby, what are you doing here?" June asked.

"Can't I be at my Darling's house?" Ruby asked in a cold tone.

"Yes, you-...Huh?" June opened her mouth in shock as she looked at Ruby:

"W-What you said...? I think I heard wrong." June wiped her ear a little.

Ruby raised an eyebrow, "What? Is it so amazing, me being in a relationship?"

"I don't think she's talking about that," Sasha commented.

"Huh?" Ruby didn't understand, she looked at Sasha and only saw her friend's neutral face.

"..." June looked at Ruby, and then she looked at Sasha, she repeated this process a few times and thought; 'As expected! My

intuition was correct! That man has a great future!"

Her eyes changed to the money symbol.

Seeing June's reaction, Natalia knew what the greedy witch was thinking, "June... What did you find out?"

"Huh...? Oh...Give me a sec," she made some gestures with her hand, and soon a big magic circle appeared in the middle of the room.

The magic circle began to grow, and slowly images began to be created.

"Oh?" Natalia looked at the magic circle with interest.

Soon the image of Lucy and Karen appeared in the magic circle.

June points to Lucy and starts giving her report:

"Lucy, a noble vampire sought out by The Inquisition, personality: Liar, cautious, cunning, proud and hardworking. He has a love affair with his partner Karen, a vampire who pretends to be Lucy's subordinate, but the woman's true identity is a noble talent scout."

The image shifted and focused only on Karen.

"Oh?" Ruby is interested, she looks at Karen, "Which clan does she serve?"

June looked at Ruby, "She serves Clan Horseman."

"Who? I've never heard of it," Ruby said.

"Neither have I," Sasha added.

"...Excuse my rude words, but... Are you living in a cave?" June commented in disbelief.

"... Well, we've been busy these days." Sasha didn't mind and

replied.

"Yes. A lot happened in a short time," Ruby added.

June sighed. "This information will be free; consider it a kind gesture." She looked at Sasha:

"The Horseman Clan is the family that took the title vampire count from Lady Sasha's family."

"....!" Sasha opened her eyes wide.

Ruby's eyes cooled further, and she looked at June.

"How do you know that? That was supposed to be confidential information." Natalia asked curiously.

"Hah! There's no such thing as a 'confidential' subject when it comes to witches." June snorted.

"In the witch world, anything can be bought with money, even that kind of information." She smiled and continued, "It cost me a lot of money, but I managed to get in touch with the witch the Horseman Clan hired, and she sold all the details."

"..." Natalia just continued with the same gentle smile on her face and didn't answer anything.

"Witch... I have a question for you."

June felt her body shiver as she heard Ruby's words, "W-What?"

"Did you sell the information on my Darling?" The air around Ruby began to grow colder, and slowly her eyes began to change to blood-red:

"Answer me."

"... N-No! I didn't sell any information about Victor! I am not a fool!"

I don't want to provoke that crazy woman!" June quickly spoke.

"..." Ruby continued to stare at June, she was looking for some lie in the witch's face, but all she saw was genuine fear.

Sasha has woken up from her stupor and looks at June with neutral eyes. "...You also know about Scathach kidnapping my husband."

"Yes, I know. A few hours ago, I received a contact from an informant who spotted Countess Scathach carrying a man like a sack of potatoes to her residence, and, from the characteristics of the man the informant gave me, I could deduce that it was Victor... Although after that, I lost contact with this informant."

"..."

"Give up on this informant; he's probably buried seven feet under the earth now," Ruby spoke in the same tone of voice, she controlled her emotions, and soon the air around her started to return to normal.

"...." June nodded in agreement, she knew Scathach's personality, the crazy woman was just too famous; he probably died... Sigh, I need to find another informant in the vampire world...

"June is a talented witch~; few witches can do what she did now..." Natalia complimented her smiling gently.

"Thank you." June flashed a satisfied smile.

"..." Ruby and Sasha just rolled their eyes when they saw June's smile.

"So? What did you find out about Lucy?" Natalia asked.

June makes a few gestures with her hand, and slowly the image of Lucy and Karen changes, and soon a huge coffin appears. The coffin was pure white, with a black crucifix symbol in the middle of the coffin.

"What is that...?" Sasha asked.

"This is the finger of Saint Mary," June replied, then she continued:

"A sacred church artifact, that's all I know; I couldn't find anything else. For me to know the contents inside that coffin, I would need to take more risks..."

"I would also need more money and connections that I don't have right now; this job is way above what I'm able to offer."

'I don't want to risk my neck and provoke the Horseman Clan; the money offered is just too low for me to take that risk,' she thought.

"As Lady Natalia paid a high price, I compensated these services with all of Lucy's information and what he's planning to do." She took a flash drive from her pocket and threw it in Natalia's direction, "This is all I can do with my current abilities." She was surprisingly honest.

"... You did more than enough, June," Natalia spoke with a gentle smile on her face, she takes a cell phone from her pocket, types something on the cell phone, and says, "Done."

June feels her cell phone vibrating in her pocket, she quickly takes her cell phone, when she sees that the money has fallen into her account, she starts drooling while staring at the number on her cell phone screen.

"10 digits!! Holy fuck!" She cried out in emotion.

"June, you're drooling..." Natalia commented.

"Oh..." She quickly wipes her face and looks at Natalia suspiciously, "Why did you pay me more than agreed? I will not refund the money!"

With the same gentle smile on her face, Natalia said, "This money

is for another job."

"Oh? What's the job!?" June was looking at Natalia as if she were a golden hen.

"I want you to investigate the Horseman Clan for Lady Sasha."

"Huh...?" June's face darkened in horror, suddenly the gentle smile on Natalia's face seemed to become an evil smile; 'That was a trap!! I will die! From the rumors I've heard from that clan, I'm 100% sure I'm going to die! They are crazy!'

"Natalia...?" Sasha didn't understand why she did it.

Natalia looked at Sasha, "I know Lady Sasha is curious about the matter, and with your family's current situation, you can't hire a witch for that kind of service."

"...Thank you, Natalia. I'll remember that," Sasha thanked.

"Hmm..." Ruby crosses her legs and looks at Natalia with curious eyes, she was thinking of doing this for Sasha; after all, Ruby doesn't lack money, but as Natalia took the initiative, she was silent... This maid seemed to have a plan too.

Natalia kept smiling, she looked at June, who had a face that looked like she made the biggest mistake of her life.

"You already received the money, right? And a witch who accepted the payment can't go back, right? Tell me... Are you going to break the rules?"

"...Ugh," June seemed to fade when she saw Natalia's 'gentle' smile.

"B-But, there's another witch in that place! Because of that, I can't do this job; after all, it would break rule number one about being a witch!"

With the same smile on her face, Natalia said, "Rule number 1: a witch must not come in conflict with another witch. If the witch's employer is an enemy of an individual who is hiring another witch, both witches must abandon their duty immediately."

"..." June's face just darkened, and it darkened more every time she heard Natalia's words.

"Strange..." She put on a confused face, "Did I ever tell you to come into conflict with Clan Horseman?"

She looked at June and smiled kindly, "I remember what I said; 'I want you to investigate the Horseman Clan for Lady Sasha.'"

"At no time did I tell you to attack them or something, did I?"

"N-No... You didn't say..."

"See? I expect good news from you~."

"Ugh," Seeing Natalia's gentle smile, June seemed to have received several damages to her body; not wanting to stay in this place anymore, she makes some gestures with her hands, and soon a magic circle appears at her feet.

"..." When June left, silence fell in the room.

"You're amazingly 'evil' for someone who always has a kind smile on their face," Maria, who was silent, said.

"Oh...?" Natalia looked at Maria.

"...I have to agree with Maria on this," Ruby said, "By asking her to investigate the Horseman Clan, conflict will eventually ensue... However, as I am not your master, I cannot order you; I hope that you know what you're doing."

Understanding the warning contained in Ruby's words, she spoke, "I know. Don't worry, Lady Ruby." Soon, she looks at Maria:

"What happened? I thought you were going to be silent forever?"

"Nothing happened," Maria said in a cold tone, then she continued, "I was just curious about the sacred artifact."

"I see," Natalia said and then walked towards a table and, when she got close to the table, saw a laptop she used when she was bored; she sits on the chair, "Let's see what's inside this flash drive."

Sasha looked at Maria. "I don't know what that artifact is, and I don't care either, but one thing I'm sure of..." Her smile widened in a distorted way, "Carlos is looking for this artifact."

Maria reacted a little when she heard Carlos' name, she looks at Sasha and seeing the look on her face, she sighed:

"... I don't regret setting a trap and killing that maid; after all, that was just work."

"..." Sasha looked at Maria neutrally, but pure hatred could be seen in her eyes.

## Chapter 42: Now you understand me.

Maria looked at Sasha and continued:

"I don't know about the other vampire hunters, but for Carlos and me, we just treated it like a job... We had no personal grudge or special reason to hunt vampires."

"Carlos and I grew up in a poor area of New Jersey, Camden... We were both orphans."

"..." Ruby and Natalia looked at Maria with curiosity.

"Two orphans surviving on the street, we could barely survive day to day, and to make matters worse, I was a girl..." She spoke the last part with a bit of hatred:

"What would eventually happen to me was obvious... I could only maintain my purity because Carlos defended me tooth and nail; he was always more developed than the people around, despite being only ten years old, he was stronger and faster than an ordinary human."

"At the time, I didn't know; I just came to find out what this abnormality of Carlos was in the future... He was a man who had the 'potential' that the priests talked about so much, he could more easily access the energy of 'God'..."

"To access this power, you need to have faith in something... I don't know what Carlos's faith was when he was younger; he never told me. But, one thing was undeniable; he was strong. "

She sighed, "We survived on the street, for 13 years, we stole, we killed for each other, we survived..."

"Until one day, a priest approached us and offered us shelter... At

first, we didn't believe in the priest, but something happened that made us trust the priest." She made a face that said she didn't want to talk too much about this.

"It was in that church that the priest discovered Carlos' potential. I remember that, at the time, the priest seemed very happy. Of course, I was happy for Carlos too, but I was also afraid... I was afraid of separating from him."

"I also auditioned to find out if I had the potential to become a slayer, and unfortunately, I didn't have the same potential as Carlos, but I had something more special..." She looked at Sasha, and slowly her blue eyes darken, "I had faith."

"I had faith in Carlos... And, because of that faith, I was able to use the hunter's powers; despite not believing in God. I believed in Carlos; for me, he was my god."

Maria makes a gesture with her hand, and then strands, almost invisible to the naked eye, began to dance around as if protecting her.

"My power is much weaker than common hunters, especially if I'm comparing my power to Carlos, but one thing is for sure... If a vampire is trapped by my threads, it's an arduous task to break free."

"Because of that, I knew I needed to be smarter and work on trapping, I was the brain, and Carlos was the muscle..."

"..." A moment of silence fell around.

"Is this supposed to move me or something?" Sasha asked neutrally with the same look.

"No." Maria denied it, she undid her power and looked at Sasha: "All I did was to survive. The hunting job was good, and we just had to kill the 'monsters' of the church, and in return, we would earn a lot of money, but... Living a little with you and observing your daily life, I could see that you are no different from humans."

"..."

"Sometimes... A thought pops into my head; could I have done things differently...?" She spoke and continued:

"But when I look back on my living conditions, I realized that I had no other alternative. Either I would become a hunter and earn enough money to be independent, or I would enter the criminal world. After all, I already had hands stained with human blood... And I don't regret the decisions I made; I did what I did just to survive."

"And now, I'm suffering the consequences of my actions..."

"...But," She bites her lip, "...Just don't kill Carlos. Please, he's all I have left..." Small tears threatened to fall from Maria's face.

"...." Sasha looks at Maria with a neutral face.

Ruby and Natalia look at Sasha and wait for her answer.

"Just imagine..." Sasha started to speak, she took a deep breath and held the hatred in her heart that threatened to explode.

"...." Maria continued to look at Sasha.

"Just imagine, you went out to solve a little problem with your friends. Then, when the problem is solved, you decide to return home, and the moment you enter your home, your precious home that should be the safest place, a place for you to lie down and relax..."

"...You find the dead body of your 'god'."

"..." Maria was silent.

"And if that wasn't enough, imagine that the enemy who killed your 'god' just did it because it was a 'job'?" Sasha asked.

"... Tell me." Sasha's eyes were glowing blood-red, "How would you feel?"

"..." Maria remained silent, she bit her lip and didn't answer Sasha's question.

Unable to hold the hate in her heart, lightning began to cover Sasha's body, and she roared:

"TELL ME! HOW WOULD YOU FEEL!?"

"Ugh," Ruby and Natalia put their hands over their ears when they hear the lightning's noise.

Maria bites her lip harder and responds in a troubled but honest voice:

"...I would feel hate, I would feel a sense of loss...I would feel empty," She replied.

"Would you forgive the murderer of your precious 'god!?'"

"I wouldn't..." Maria clenched her fists tightly, but in the end, she just sighed and felt very tired.

"...See? Now you understand me." Sasha spoke in a neutral tone with a distorted smile of hate.

"..." Maria didn't answer anymore, she just turned and walked towards the kitchen.

Sasha continued to watch Maria's back until she was out of her sight.

"Natalia..." She lowered her face a little, and her blond hair covered her face.

"Yes, Lady Sasha?"

"Open the gate to Ruby's house..." She spoke neutrally.

Natalia nods and snaps her finger, "Done."

Sasha nods, she gets up from the couch and walks to the door, "I'm going ahead, Ruby," She spoke without turning her back.

"Okay, I'll go after I get some business done at college," Ruby said.

Sasha opens the door, and soon a galaxy-like portal appeared. Sasha entered the portal and soon disappeared from the two women's view.

When Sasha left, Ruby spoke aloud to herself, "In the end, there is no good and bad, there are only consequences of your actions, huh?... It looks like you're correct... Mother"

"Lady Ruby? Something happened?"

"Hmm...?" Ruby looks at Natalia, "Nothing happened. I'm going to sleep a bit; I'm a little tired."

Ruby gets up from the couch and walks towards the exit.

Natalia gets up from her chair and walks towards the kitchen; by the time she enters the kitchen, she sees Maria kneeling on the floor in a fetal position, she was in a corner of the kitchen crying silently.

Sigh!

She sighed and said to herself in a low voice, "I'm not good with these sentimental things."

...

Current location, Lucy's hideout.

Karen walked into Lucy's office and said, "We've been compromised." However, she didn't look worried.

"Indeed, this was to be expected. So what data did the attacker steal?" Lucy, who was sitting in a chair behind an office desk, spoke.

"Only our basic plans."

"Good." Lucy smiled, "Do we know about our little mouse?"

"We couldn't register anything; the intruder suddenly appeared and disappeared with the data," Karen replied.

Lucy puts his hand on his chin, "Hmm, beings able to go underground in a building and walk through an armored vault without being detected."

"Witches... And it's not just any witch," He said.

"Indeed. I had the same conclusion," Karen replied.

Lucy shrugged, "Well, wolves would leave more trails, and noble vampires capable of doing something like that would just storm through the front door; witches would be the most obvious conclusion."

Lucy showed a slight smile on his face, "Our plan is almost complete, soon we will have the power to join the nobility of vampires."

Karen nodded, then she spoke:

"...The Horseman Clan sent reinforcements."

"Oh? They will finally act; I think they are desperate for allies."

"Yes... they are."

"Hmm?" Lucy looked at Karen.

"Why that face? Did something happen?" He asked.

"...Yes, it's okay, I just feel that something is wrong," She said.

"Why?"

"... The reinforcement that Clan Horseman has sent are the three heir sons of the Clan."

"Huh...?" Lucy didn't understand.

"What is that man thinking? Why did he send his children to this place?" Lucy asked out loud as he tapped his finger on the table.

"Maybe for protection?" Karen deduced, "They've won everything that belongs to Clan Fulger, but Clan Fulger's allies are surprisingly loyal to that woman. I've also heard rumors that that woman's sister is planning a game against Clan Horseman."

"...There are rumors that Countess Agnes Snow is not satisfied with this gross shift in power."

"What are the movements of the royal family?" He asked.

"Uncertain... I think they're going to be neutral about all of this."

"...He's being attacked from all sides, huh?" Lucy spoke after thinking a little.

"Yes..." Karen replied.

"Well... No matter what that man's plan is, we just have to hurry our preparations and complete the ritual; I don't want to share the artifact's power with those heirs," Lucy replied with a greedy smile.

"Me neither," Karen replied with the same smile as Lucy.

## Chapter 43: Darling!

"DARLING~!" A woman's voice was heard throughout the forest.

"That voice..." Kaguya whispered.

"Fue!?" Pepper was startled by the sudden voice.

Victor stops what he's doing and looks in one direction with a smile on his face, then he opens his arms and waits patiently.

"What is he doing?" Lacus asked curiously.

Kaguya looked at Lacus and replied in a neutral tone, "Taming a stalker..."

"...Huh?" Lacus didn't understand.

"Something is coming at a fast speed," Pepper warned in a gentle tone.

Before Lacus could ask Pepper anything, a long white-haired rocket hit Victor!

BOOOOOM!

Victor was thrown towards the trees, which broke with relative ease, but throughout the shock of the 'white rocket', he never stopped smiling.

Lying on the forest floor, he lifted his head and looked into Violet's face, then he said, "Welcome back, Honey." He ignored the small deforestation this reunion had caused.

He lifts his arm, then starts stroking Violet's head.

"!!!" Violet's face took on a crazed expression, "Ahh~~, Darling!"

She puts her face on Victor's chest and continues to talk like a broken record that repeated the same words over and over again. "Darling~! Darling~! Darling~! Darling~!"

Victor just continued stroking Violet's hair with a smile on his face, "I missed you," He said.

"Me too~! I was worried that these bi-" Before she could finish, she heard someone's words.

"Oya? Who are you?" Lacus asked.

"Tsk," Violet looked at Lacus with an ugly expression, but soon her expression became calmer when she felt Victor's caresses.

"Idiot! She is the heiress of Clan Snow, she is friends with Ruby!" Pepper yelled in a cute voice.

"Who?" Lacus turned her head in confusion.

Pepper just looked at Lacus with a disbelieving look, "...You should socialize more, sister..."

Lacus snorted, "I prefer training and sleeping; socializing is for the weak!"

"... You only say that because you're bad at socializing."

"..." Lacus used her right to remain silent.

"Lady Violet... You took longer than expected," Kaguya said.

Violet looked at Kaguya, then she smiled, "Good job, Kaguya! As expected of you! I'm going to raise your salary!"

Kaguya exhibited a small smile and placed her hand respectfully on her chest, "Your words are an honor, Lady Violet."

Victor sits on the floor, hugs Violet, and starts to smell her; then

he smells an unknown smell, "A man..."

"Hiii~" Pepper seems startled by something, and she quickly hides behind her sister.

"What's it?" Lacus asked, looking at her sister.

"N-Nothing!" Pepper refused to speak.

"Tell me, Honey. Did you meet anyone on the way here?"

Violet turns her face to Victor, and suddenly her body shudders, but it wasn't out of fear; it was something else... She flashes a big distorted smile and replies:

"Yes, I found my father and mother."

"Oh..." Victor's face returned to normal, and he smiled gently, "How was your visit to your family?" He started stroking her head again.

"Hmm," Violet thinks for a moment and replies, "My mom is still a narcissistic bitch, and my dad is still sick..."

"Oh," Victor didn't know what to say when he heard Violet, but he had a doubt; Can vampires get sick?

"And my dad wants to meet you...Is that okay with you?" She looked a little hesitant.

"Hmm? It's alright; This is a good opportunity to meet your family." He spoke lightly.

"I see," She flashed a happy smile.

"But before that, I should get back to training," Victor stood up while holding Violet like a princess, then he leaves her on the ground and looks at Lacus:

"Let's continue?"

Lacus exhibited a thirsty smile and said, "Of course."

Victor walks to where he was, with Lacus following him.

"Hmm... Did I miss something?" Violet asked as she looked at Lacus with dark eyes.

"Lady Violet, calm down first," Kaguya said.

"Huh...? I'm calm... look at my face, I'm calm, alright?" She smiled with her sharp teeth bared.

"Sigh!" Kaguya took a long breath and placed a hand on her brow.

"...Lord Victor is training with Lady Lacus; we found that the best way for him to learn the basics is through fighting," Kaguya began to explain:

"Oh, explain more," Violet was interested.

"We did a lot of tests with Victor, but in the end, he can't learn by logic," Pepper replied in Kaguya's place.

Violet looks at Pepper and, when she looked at Pepper's breasts, clicked her tongue in annoyance; why does all that witch's family have these big breasts? They're not even her real daughters!

"Darling, isn't stupid? Why isn't he learning by logic?" Violet asked as she tried to ignore Pepper's melons swaying with every simple move she made.

"...Darling..." Pepper's face turned red and, as smoke started to come out of her head, she began to mutter at supernatural speed; she seemed to enter her own world.

"...?" Violet didn't understand Pepper's reaction.

"Yes, Lord Victor is not stupid... But he is very different from ordinary noble vampires," Kaguya continued.

"I know he's not normal after all; he's my Darling!" Violet displayed a proud smile.

Kaguya holds back the urge to sigh again and continues, "When noble vampires go to do an action that, for our species would be commonplace, they succeed naturally, right?"

"Yes," Violet remembers that it was the same with her.

"Lord Victor doesn't work like that; if he tries to do a simple action, some explosion of power will always happen. He looks like a battery that contains a lot of power and never gets discharged. Because of that, he can't control his power to learn the basics."

BOOOOOOOOOM!

Victor was suddenly thrown into the sky by Lacus.

"HAHAHAHAHA,"

"He seems to be enjoying himself..." Violet was a little annoyed.

While he was in the sky, he suddenly made a move. Victor kicked the air and launched himself towards the ground, and, when he did that, Violet could see that pure fire had gone out as he kicked the air.

And when he was falling towards the ground, his body started to be covered by lightning, and when he landed on the ground, a little ice explosion happened.

"...What in the seven hells was that?" Violet asked in disbelief.

"As Lady Violet can see... Any small actions Victor does, he unconsciously releases his powers and, because of that, he can't learn the basic skills of a vampire."

Kaguya looks at Victor, struggling with a small shock in her heart; Didn't he notice? He's combining his powers perfectly; is that what people call a 'genius'?

Victor went into combat again with Lacus. The red-haired vampire had a slight smile on her face as she used only her physical strength to fight. Although sometimes, she had to use her fog powers to defend herself from the flames Victor unleashed.

After all, these flames were dangerous even to her, who was a vampire that was over 400 years old.

Unlike Pepper and Ruby, Lacus didn't have the power of water or ice. However, Lacus had the power to control the mist, and she generally uses that power to confuse enemies and flee.

Small explosions can be heard when Victor and Lacus engage in combat.

"...He always seems to be at full power and never gets tired, so we decided he should get tired first." Pepper recovered and spoke in a cute voice.

"As Lady Lacus had nothing to do, we decided she should fight Victor, but while the two of them were fighting, we found that he learns faster by fighting than explaining." Kaguya finished explaining

"In the beginning... He wasn't managing to keep up with Lacus, but slowly, he started to get used to his body, now... He can give Lacus a decent fight; he's getting better really fast," Kaguya said.

"As expected from my Darling!" Violet spoke with pride.

"...He reminds me a bit of my mother..." Pepper commented with her finger on her cheek as she looked at Victor, who had a big smile on his face.

"How rude, he's not crazy, and an old hag," Violet huffed.

"That was not what I meant!" Pepper yelled, seeing that Violet ignored her, her cheeks starting to turn squirrel-like, then she turned away, "Humpf!"

Boing! Boing!

Veins started popping in Violet and Kaguya's heads:

"This bitch... Is she teasing me?" Violet growled.

"Calm down, Lady Violet, we must not commit murder here; we must take her to a dark alley first," Kaguya suggested with a stoic expression.

"Oh, that's a good idea." Violet smiled dangerously.

Pepper felt a shiver in her body, and since her instincts had always been good, she decided to slowly back away from Violet and Kaguya.

"...Silently..." She whispered as she walked away.

But she didn't expect a big body to fly towards her!

"Kyaaa!" She screamed in fear as her body collided with Victor's.

"Oh... I'm sorry, sister," Lacus said a little regretfully.

"Ouch," Victor puts his hand on his head, "This power to become mist is annoying" He spoke annoyed, but the smile never left his face: Every time I go to hit her, her body turns and fog, and she runs away, it's very slippery... Hmm, I feel like I'm doing something wrong, but I don't know what it is...

Feeling a heaviness on his chest, Victor looks down and sees Pepper's red face lying on his chest.

"It's decided... I'm going to kill this one, Bitch!" Pure fire started to come out of Violet's body. When Violet was going to run towards

Pepper and Victor, she was suddenly immobilized by Kaguya.

"Let go of me, Kaguya!" Violet began to struggle.

"Although the idea of killing Pepper is interesting... I can't let Lady Violet do that; what just happened was clearly an accident." Kaguya spoke in a neutral tone.

"Wawawawawa! I'm sorry—" Pepper was about to say something, but suddenly Victor stood up while holding Pepper like a princess.

"Fue...?" Pepper didn't know what to say, so she was silent as her face was completely red.

He puts Pepper on the floor and pats Pepper's clothes to dust them off, then, finishing knocking the dust off of Pepper's body, he squats down a little and puts his face level with Pepper's face. That is something he's needed to do a lot lately; being 195 cm tall has its downsides.

Then he says, smiling gently, "Don't be too inattentive while two people are fighting, okay?" He appeared to be talking to a small child.

"... Mm." Pepper nodded.

"Good" Soon, he gets up and looks at Lacus with eyes glowing red, his smile changed from a gentle smile to a distorted smile, "Let's continue."

"Yeah," Lacus agreed.

"..." Kaguya and Violet were speechless when they saw Victor's attitude; they expected him to react differently when Pepper fell on him with those two melons, but why did he treat Pepper like a child!? For God's sake, she's over 100 years old!

## Chapter 44: Together.

A few hours later, Victor was still fighting Lacus, and he didn't seem to be tired. Victor was still glowing with energy, and he felt like he could fight for as long as it took! He looked like a child who was very excited about his toy.

"...He's getting better too fast...Actually, he's making fewer useless moves? How is this possible? He never fought from what I remember," Violet spoke as she placed her hand on her chin, she watched Victor for a long time... a long time! And she clearly remembers that he never practiced martial arts; 'self-defense training with that wolf doesn't count as martial arts, after all, that's just self-defense, I don't understand this absurd progress.'

"This is not as unusual as you think."

"!!!!" Violet is startled by the sudden voice, and she looks up, "Old witch! Don't scare me like that!"

Scathach's face distorts for a few seconds, she suddenly moves at a speed Violet can't react to, then she hits Violet's head with her fist.

"Ouch!" Violet held her head, "What are you doing, witch-"

Scathach hits Violet's head again.

"You never learn, huh? Do you have chicken brains? Respect your elders."

"See? You, yourself, said you were old!" Violet stuck out her tongue.

"..." Scathach looked at Violet with a neutral expression.

"You're actually a lot like your mom when she was younger..."

She looks at Victor and continues, "Although your mom never had eyes for potential, you seem to be different."

"Of course, my Darling has potential! He's my Darling!"

"...." Scathach looks at Violet's smug face with a blank expression, "I take it back; you really are just like your mother."

"Huh? I'm different from her—" She was about to say something, but suddenly she turned her face toward Scathach's mansion.

"Oh?" Scathach flashed a curious smile when she saw Victor stop his training and look toward her mansion.

"Sasha," Victor and Violet spoke in unison.

"Huh? Why did you stop Victor?" Lacus asked curiously.

'Interesting, no matter how many times I see it, this is really something curious... Due to the magic in the ritual, their connection must have gotten stronger, and it seems that it wasn't only the connection that got stronger' Scathach eyes seemed to glow blood red for a few seconds as she looked at Victor.

Victor ignores Lacus, closes his eyes, and senses Sasha's messed up emotional state, and soon he sends his worried feelings towards her.

Sasha, who just arrived at Scathach's mansion, looked towards the forest, "Darling..." Then, sensing the emotions that Victor sent, she displays a small gentle smile, she closes her eyes and sends her thoughts, saying, 'It's all well.'

"Another intruder, today has been a strange day, so many visitors... Hmm? Oh, it's Lady Sasha." Siena suddenly appeared.

Sasha's gentle smile fades from her face, and she assumes a neutral expression, "Siena, it has been a while since we have seen each other."

"Indeed. I know it's useless to ask this, but what are you doing here?"

"I came to see my husband," Sasha said.

"...As expected," She sighed, she flips her hair to her back and says, "Do you want some advice?"

"No, thank you." Sasha turned her face away and started walking towards the forest.

"..." Siena just gaped when she saw Sasha rejecting her goodwill.

She disappears and appears beside Sasha.

"What? I'm in a hurry." Sasha looked at Siena.

"Listen to me, young people these days are very rushed..." She sighed, then she continued, "In vampire history, there has never been a man who was married to 3 heiresses from powerful families-" She was going to start giving a sermon on Sasha.

"Yes, Yes." Sasha interrupted Siena, "If the younger vampires find out about this, they'll be jealous, and if the older vampires find out about it, they'll think the three most powerful families are allying, Blah, Blah."

"..."

Sasha looks coldly at Siena, "Are you treating me like a child? I know what I'm doing, and if a problem happens, my husband and I will fix it. So your advice is useless, and you keep losing time telling me this nonsense. And, are you going to look for a man to put out your fire?"

"..." Siena's eyes flashed blood red, she was clearly annoyed.

"It looks like you're not having a good time; something must have

happened."

Sasha huffed, "Yeah, something happened. My family lost everything that was built for 2000 years because of my whore mother, and the woman I consider my real mother died, murdered by church dogs... So yes, something happened, and I'm sorry if I didn't want to hear your bullshit."

"..." Siena looked sympathetically towards Sasha, and that made Sasha angrier.

'Calm down, she's not to blame; you know that' She heard Victor's voice.

Sasha bites her lip and clenches her fist tightly; then, she lets out a big sigh.

She looks at Siena with a regretful expression, "I'm sorry, Siena... But I'm not having a good time right now, okay? I just want to see my husband."

"I figured that out, and don't worry about what happened; I know what it's like to take anger out on someone who is innocent." Siena was very understanding.

"Okay...? Anyway, do you need something?" Sasha asked.

"Hmm... I'll talk to you later, go see your 'husband'," Siena spoke the last word with a bit of disgust.

"..." Sasha's eyes changed to blood red as she saw the obvious contempt for Victor.

But since she didn't want to conflict with Ruby's sister, she just turned her face away and started walking towards Victor.

Seeing Sasha's reaction and remembering her own mother's reaction, Siena's curiosity about Victor started to grow again, but also a feeling of disgust grew. "How can they marry cattle? That's

disgusting." She spoke as her body shuddered.

Unlike Lacus and Pepper, Siena learned of Victor's origin through conversations with Scathach herself; after all, as Scathach's eldest daughter, she always helped her mother in whatever she needed.

Scathach was a strong vampire, but she didn't care much for democracy or dialogue. She wasn't like that in the past, but she started to get numb the longer she lived. Now, she doesn't like to waste time on dialogue, and generally, she just does what she wants.

Because of that, Siena's assistance was needed; Scathach needed someone to take responsibility for her territory and someone to clean up her mess whenever she needed it.

And, since Siena has a lot of respect for her mother, she did this job with a smile on her face. Besides, it's not like this job was bad, she has all the power that someone with the vampire count title can have, and that influence is something she liked.

"I need to get back to work," Siena spoke aloud as she started walking towards a place.

...

"Hey, Witch. What do you mean that this is not unusual?" Violet said as she was looking at Victor, who was fighting Lacus.

"..." Scathach looked at Violet with a tired expression.

"Sigh, is your brain really rotten?" She sighed.

Violet ignored it and continued, "I know my Darling is awesome; after all, he is my Darling!" She smiled proudly.

"But I also know that what he's doing isn't normal... I think."

Scathach rolled her eyes, and then she looks at Victor: "What he is doing now, fighting and learning while fighting, is not uncommon.

Many warriors in the past have done this, and I can count on my finger the warriors who had this ability, warriors like Cu Chulainn, Hercules, Arthur Pendragon, Lancelot, etc."

"...." Violet looked at Scathach in disbelief.

"You are really old."

Scathach makes a fist and hits Violet on the head again!

"Ouch! My head!" She holds her head in pain.

Scathach looks at her fist, "...Now that I think about it, maybe I'm to blame for your being so stupid. Hitting you on the head since you were a little girl must have caused it... And there's your mother's genes in your blood too..."

"Stop hitting my head!" Violet grumbled.

"Countess Scathach seems to have a very high opinion of Lord Victor," Kaguya said curiously.

Scathach ignored Violet and looked at Kaguya, "The ritual changed him. He was turned into a vampire, but not an ordinary vampire; because of his blood, he became something else..." She looked at Victor with a distorted smile on her face, "And at the same time, he received the potential of three bloodlines."

"Clan Snow, Clan Scarlett, and Clan Fulger," Kaguya said.

"We can ignore Clan Snow and Clan Fulger; after all, one is a stupid woman, and the other is a useless woman who likes to bet, and in the end, she always lost the bet," Scathach spoke in disdain.

"With just my bloodline alone, he could become very powerful, but, as he has these 'extra' bloodlines, he can become even stronger. And, to improve his personality, he reminds me of me when I was younger..." Her smile seemed to distort even more, "Ahh~~. I'm looking forward to the future~."

"..." Seeing Scathach's distorted smile, Kaguya couldn't help thinking it was a bad idea to let Scathach find out about Victor.

"Huh...? I agree that my mother is a useless bitch, but my father is in my clan too!"

Scathach looks at Violet with a disinterested expression, "A man who has been exploited all his life? A man with the only quality of being handsome? A man who exists only to satisfy your mother's vanity?"

"Boring~"

## Chapter 45: Insanity? Wrong, I'm sane.

"..." Violet wasn't offended by what Scathach said, she was used to the woman's dirty mouth, but she couldn't help asking:

"You seem to know my father."

"Of course I know that man, in the past his mother asked me to save him from two strong women. What were their names again? ... I forget; they are not important anyway."

"..." Violet started to think about what she heard, she had suspicions that something like that happened to her father in the past. After all, he was very handsome, and that powerless beauty was just a curse.

"The two women were strong, but I couldn't even enjoy myself for very long... Well, seeing your mother, who was a psycho bitch, bending over to me for my help, was a satisfying thing to see." She smiled with some amusement.

"I'd like to see that..." Violet flashed a smile.

"..." Kaguya looked, with an expressionless face, at Violet, and she couldn't help but comment:

"Is Lady Violet really Countess Agnes' daughter?"

"Hmm?" Violet looked at Kaguya, "Yes, I am, but my mom is a very narcissistic woman. I grew up hearing the same words about how she was 'beautiful', how she was 'hot', it was fucking annoying."

"...." Thinking back to the past, Kaguya nodded in agreement.

"I feel bad for you~" Scathach commented with a small smile on her face; it was obvious she was enjoying herself.

"Humpf," Violet snorted.

"Victor! What is that!?"

Hearing Pepper's curious scream, the three women look towards Victor, soon they see something that shocks them.

Victor was covered in lightning, his right arm was covered in pure ice, and his left arm was covered in fire.

"Hmm, it worked; I knew something was wrong. Thank you, Lacus," Victor said, smiling at Lacus.

"...Huh?" Lacus was confused, "But I didn't teach you anything; I just hit you?"

"I learned a lot by watching the way you use your fog powers," He explained.

"..." Lacus looked at Victor in shock.

"Interesting..." Scathach suddenly appeared beside Victor and looked him up and down as if sizing him up.

"Did you manage to find your balance?" She spoke as her eyes glowed red.

"Wrong." Victor shook his head, "My powers aren't balanced. I'm using 80% of the lightning all over my body and 10% of the fire and ice in my arms."

"Oh?" Scathach's smile grew a little.

"While I was fighting Lacus, I discovered several things about my own power." Victor's body suddenly returns to normal, and soon his body starts to catch fire.

"Fire is a very easy power to control, but if I just use fire, I start to feel 'angry', and any little things that happen, I get easily irritated."

Victor was giving a much more intense feeling than usual as he spoke those words.

"This is normal," Violet said as she walked to Victor's side.

"What do you mean?" Lacus asked curiously.

"The characteristic of my family's power is to amplify anger and any strong emotions the individual is feeling. For example, if I get jealous now, that jealousy of mine will be amplified by my power," Violet explained.

"Because of that, sometimes, I lose control of my emotions."

"...Isn't that just an excuse for your twisted personality?" Pepper asked in a cute voice.

"..." Violet looked at Pepper with a neutral face.

"....!" Sensing a bad feeling and fearing for her own safety, Pepper silently hid behind her mother.

Victor flashed a small smile when he saw Violet's interaction with Pepper.

The fire disappears from his body, and soon his body starts to get covered in ice:

"Secondly, Ice is very difficult to control, and if I use it too long, I start to feel a feeling of indifference; I become very listless." He spoke in a cold, indifferent voice.

"Well, that's the hallmark of my power, though it doesn't affect me that much." Scathach spoke with a small smile on her face.

Violet rolled her eyes; of course, it doesn't affect you; you're a crazy bitch.

Hearing someone approaching footsteps, the group looked at the

individual.

"Welcome back, Lady Sasha," Kaguya greeted Sasha.

"I'm back," Sasha was going to say something, but her words caught in her throat when she saw Victor's body become covered in lightning.

"W-What?" She wasn't believing what she was seeing.

"From her reaction, I think she doesn't know about Victor's powers. Does anyone mind letting her know about it?" Lacus asked.

"Pass," Kaguya said.

"Boring," Scathach said.

"Laziness~," Violet said.

"I'm tired," Lacus said.

"..."

All the women looked at Pepper.

"Fue...?" Pepper looks at the women, then a pout appears on her face, and she says, "Fine... I will do it."

Pepper approaches Sasha and starts explaining to her everything that happened.

"Thirdly, Lightning is a very unique power, it greatly increases my speed, and because of that, I can't control it very well, but compared to the other two powers, lightning is more neutral-"

"You're wrong, husband." Sasha suddenly stopped talking to Pepper and interrupted Victor.

"Hmm?" Victor looked at Sasha.

"My power was originally supposed to harm the vampire greatly, but, thanks to my father's bloodline, this effect is negated, and the hallmark of my power is to amplify recklessness," she explained. Even though she didn't understand how Victor could use her lightning, she didn't want him to misunderstand her power.

'I thought he could only use Violet's power,' She thought.

"Recklessness?" Victor spoke.

"Yes, you're more likely to do reckless things when you use lightning too much," Sasha added, but, soon she goes back to talking to Pepper.

"Oh... But I guess that doesn't apply to me?" Victor spoke as he stopped using his power.

"That's because Darling is already so reckless; you get too lost when you're having fun." Violet smiled.

"Oh-... That's true" Victor can't deny it.

"Lord Victor has been training for over 21 hours, and you probably didn't even feel the hours go by, right?" Kaguya spoke.

"Well, my timing is impaired because of this endless night." Victor looked up at the full moon. "I was having a lot of fun too." He flashed a big smile.

Looking at Victor's smile, Kaguya sighed, "Sigh~, I feel like I'm going to sigh a lot in my life." She had a feeling her words were correct...

"I see..." Scathach placed a hand on her chin, "You haven't found a perfect balance; you're just using the powers in a way that doesn't impair your ability to think while fighting."

Victor looks at Scathach, "I've lost control of my actions twice in the past. I don't intend to make that mistake a third time."

"That's a good mentality." She praised him with a small smile on her face.

"Thank you" He smiled a little.

"Darling~" Violet climbed onto Victor's back.

"Hmm?" Victor looked at Violet.

"You need to get some rest." She flashed a smile as her eyes glowed blood red...

Understanding what she wanted, Victor agreed, "... You're right."

"Ehh? Aren't you going to train anymore?" Lacus asked with a pout.

"I will train later," He replied.

"Hmm, sorry, but that won't happen." Scathach flashed a distorted smile.

"Huh?" Lacus looked at her mother in disbelief.

"I have a bad feeling about this..." Kaguya whispered in a low voice.

"I could see what you are capable of doing today, and I know what kind of training is right for you." Her smile seemed to grow disproportionately, "Rest for three days; you'll need it."

Scathach turned, and soon everyone could just see the woman's silhouette.

While running in the forest, Scathach said, "Ahh~, how long has it been since I have trained someone with such potential? I think it's been 1800 years?"

"Well, it doesn't matter~." She stopped thinking about it, but when she remembered she was going to train a man with so much potential, her body trembled in ecstasy, "Ahh~, I'm excited!" Then, without realizing it, her cheeks turned a little red, and her breathing became gasping, her eyes glowed blood red, and she flashed a big smile that showed all of her sharp teeth:

"This is going to be fun~, HAHAHAAAAHA," She was having so much fun.

Hearing Scathach's crazy laughter in the forest, Victor felt his body shiver; he was excited!

Lacus and Pepper also felt their bodies shiver, but they weren't excited; they were scared.

"Well..." Lacus looked at Victor with a sympathetic expression, "I hope you don't get traumatized..."

"Sniff, Sniff~" Pepper starts to get watery eyes, and she falls to the ground, "...I don't want my new friend to die!"

"It's okay, Sister..." Lacus massaged Pepper's back, "Victor won't die, I fought him, and I know he's strong... He'll just be a little traumatized, but that's normal. "

"...." Sasha looked incredulously at Pepper and Lacus.

"Aren't you exaggerating?"

"They are not exaggerating," Violet spoke with a lifeless face, she seemed to be thinking about something.

"That crazy witch is very spartan; remember she is over 2000 years old, her training is not 'ordinary' for today," Violet still remembers the time when she came to visit Ruby after training. Her friend had dead eyes, and when she heard Ruby narrate her training, Violet felt her body shudder.

Unconsciously, she hugged Victor's back tighter.

"..." Sasha was worried, she looked at Victor, but she was surprised when she saw the big smile on Victor's face.

"... Why are you smiling?"

"....?" Violet looked at Victor.

"Huh?" He put a hand to his face, confused, "I don't know...? But I just find it all so much fun... Indeed... this is so much fun Hahahaha," He puts his hand on his face and starts to laugh.

Sasha was speechless, "...Maybe, just maybe...I need to take my husband to the psychologist," She was taking it seriously; this kind of reaction is way beyond ordinary madness.

## Chapter 46: A beautiful night.

Some hours later.

Violet, Sasha, and Victor separated from the group, and they started walking through the forest until they found a massive tree. Looking at the tree, they decided to sit under it.

By the time Victor sits down on the ground, Violet can't hold back any longer, she climbs into Victor's lap and bites his neck.

Feeling Violet sucking his blood, Victor began stroking her hair while keeping a gentle smile on his face.

Sasha sat on Victor's right side, "As usual, she's in a hurry."

"Hahaha, if she wasn't like that, she wouldn't be my lovely Violet," He chuckled a little.

Violet felt her body shudder as she heard Victor's words. Then, slowly, she stopped sucking his blood too hard and got more comfortable in his lap.

Victor opens his mouth, and soon his teeth change; wasting no time, he bites Violet's collarbone.

"Ugh~" Violet moaned a little, but she didn't stop sucking Victor's blood, she looked very thirsty.

Sasha looks at the moon and ignores the two for now. A part of her was jealous of Violet taking the initiative in front of her, but she was used to Violet's attitude; because of that, she didn't try to think about it too much.

A few minutes later, Violet stopped biting Victor and licked the blood from her lips, her blood-red eyes slowly start to change to a

violet color.

Feeling satisfied with Violet's blood, Victor stops biting his wife's collarbone, and then he looks at Violet and smiles.

Violet approaches Victor and starts licking his lips, "My blood tastes weird." She grumbled.

"Really?" Victor was curious, "What does it taste like?"

"... like normal blood?"

"...." Victor was speechless and flashed an amused smile.

"I think vampires don't like to drink their own blood."

"Hmm~," Violet just closed her eyes and enjoyed Victor's caresses as she smiled.

Victor leans his head against Violet's head, "It's Sasha's turn."

Violet's eyes began to darken, but Victor just displayed a gentle smile and kissed her mouth.

Tongues began to fight over who was victorious.

Eventually, Victor stopped kissing Violet; he caressed her face and said, "Don't think nonsense, you silly."

Violet pouted cutely and slowly climbed out of Victor's lap, then sat on his left side, she holds his arm possessively and looks at Sasha while displaying a face that said 'mine'!

Soon she rested her head on Victor's arm and closed her eyes.

Sasha rolled her eyes when she saw Violet's attitude. Victor chuckled, and, with his right hand, he patted his thigh.

Looking at his gesture, Sasha's face turns a little red, and slowly

she crawls and sits on Victor's lap.

"Now that I got to see you more closely, you've really gotten taller," Sasha commented in an attempt to avoid her embarrassment.

"Indeed. My evolution gave me a lot of things~" Victor laughed.

He tugs at Sasha's waist with his right hand, and then he feels Sasha's body brush against his.

He lightly caresses Sasha's thick thighs.

"!!!" Sasha feels her body shudder at the sudden caresses.

"I-" She tried to say something.

"Shhh," Victor puts his finger to her mouth with a silent gesture, then pulls Sasha's head to his chest and starts stroking her head.

"Are you okay?" He asked in a gentle voice.

Sasha's body shuddered at the sudden question, but soon she took a long breath and relaxed her body, she snuggled into Victor's chest and spoke in a slightly tired voice, "...Now, I am."

Victor exhibited a small smile, "If you need to talk, I'm always here to listen."

"..." There was a moment of silence.

Sasha flashed a gentle little smile on her face, "I know... And I appreciate that... But right now, I just want to be like this..." Then, slowly, she started to close her eyes.

Victor just continued with a gentle smile on his face and, as he stroked Sasha's hair, he stares into the moonlight.

'I didn't realize it, but...' He thought for a moment, then spoke aloud. "What a beautiful night..." Slowly, he closed his eyes, "A calm

and peaceful night..."

...

Victor's College, early afternoon.

"Tsk," Ruby was upset, she woke up wanting to punish a certain vampire, but when she went to college, that vampire was gone.

She looks around Corneliu's office and realizes that everything was untouched; it was like he was in such a hurry to get away.

"He must have gone back to Nightingale" She spoke in a cold tone, she turns and walks towards the exit:

"Well, he can't run away from me." She flashed a cold little smile.

...

Director's office.

"What do you mean you're dropping out of college? It's just the beginning of the year; you can't drop out of college now!" A blond-haired man with a big fat belly spoke.

"Headmaster, I need to get back to my country; more important things than my college are going on," Ruby spoke in a neutral tone while crossing her legs elegantly.

"..." The director sighed and sat down in his chair:

"An emergency..." He puts a hand on his brow.

"Indeed." She nodded, "You know where I live, right? My mother is already a very old woman, and I need to go back to take care of her."

"... Well, it's an emergency," The principal sighed again. It's a shame he's going to lose one of the most talented students in the

college, but the student had a life of her own; he couldn't force anything on her.

"All right. I will provide the papers as soon as possible."

"...thank you, director," Ruby exhibited a cold little smile. Then, slowly, her eyes change to red, and she continues, "Can you do the same procedure for the student named Victor Walker?"

"Huh?" The Headmaster didn't understand, but when he looked into Ruby's eyes, it was as if all his worries disappeared.

"Unfortunately, something urgent happened, and he needs to get out of college."

"Oh, that's too bad. Yes. It will be done." The director spoke in a robotic voice as his eyes glowed blood red.

"Good," Ruby smiled as she remembered something, "You don't need to notify the parents of the mentioned student."

"Yes. I will not notify the parents of the student mentioned." He repeated in the same monotone.

Ruby got up from the couch and walked towards the exit.

When the door closed, Ruby walked away from the Headmaster's office.

The director woke up from his hypnotic state, "Huh? What was I doing?" He thought for a few seconds, but he couldn't remember; he just had the feeling that someone was in this office a few seconds ago.

Without him noticing, his eyes turned red for a few seconds, then disappeared, and, as if by magic, all his worries disappeared:

"I must go back to work. I have to provide papers for the two students who are leaving from college."

...

"Hmm, I think with that, I got rid of the loose ends left by my Darling, and by Violet...I think I'll go home now." Ruby, who was walking the halls of the college alone, spoke to herself.

"Lady Ruby, you need to go to Lady Violet's mansion; two hunters were abandoned in that place," Ruby suddenly heard Luna's voice.

"...Luna, you're back." She looked back and saw her personal maid.

"Yes! I needed to do something for your mom!"

"Oh...? And what did you do for my mother?"

"I built a coliseum!" She spoke in a proud tone as she patted her chest.

"Did you build it?" Ruby's eyes narrowed in suspicion.

"...I asked the witches to build it, but everything was supervised by me!"

'She was probably sitting while watching the witches at work,' Ruby thought.

Ruby sighed at Luna's attitude and thought of the coliseum; 'My mom is thinking about training my Darling?... I hope he doesn't get traumatized.'

Ruby looks coldly at Luna, "I haven't forgotten what you did; you will be punished."

"....!?"

"But I was thinking of what's best for Lady Ruby!"

"No excuses."

"I'm going to cut your salary by 90%," Ruby gave her ultimatum, as expected from Ruby, a kind woman; her punishment was very light. If it were with other vampires, the employee would have already died from this 'betrayal'.

But for Luna, this kind of punishment was just too scary. Luna's face darkened, "Impossible... How am I going to buy my clothes on this small salary!"

"..." Ruby looked at her maid in disbelief.

"Even if I reduced your salary by 90%, you're still going to earn \$30,000, isn't that enough?"

"It is not! I spend 30,000 dollars in one night!"

"..."

"Your sense of money is totally broken," Ruby spoke flatly.

"Huh?" Luna didn't understand.

"Nevermind." Ruby turned her face away and started walking, "Did you bring the car?"

"Yes!" Luna smiled.

"Good, I was tired of walking around in this black coat."

"Lady Ruby must look like a suspicious person on the street," Luna spoke in a teasing tone.

"..." Ruby looked at Luna again, "Don't test your luck, or I'll cut your salary again."

"Please don't!... I'll be quiet."